

The Second Most Incredible Book about God, Life, Death, Heaven, Hell, Satan, the Theory of Evolution, and the Search for Extra Terrestrial Intelligence.

INTRODUCTION

This book is the result of more than thirty-years of extensive Bible study and in-depth research into the Creation vs. Evolution debate. It is written clearly and concisely in language which doesn't require a degree in either science or theology to enjoy. In complete agreement with the Bible, every point is supported by accompanying Scripture, obvious logic and/or scientific and historical fact (derived from over sixty sources). The book is divided into two major sections with a total of twenty-four chapters. Each chapter is short, fast-moving and filled with information which is not only extremely interesting, but highly relevant to our lives today.

The first section is all about God, life, and eternity. It explains both who and what God is, the loving reason He has created us, and the wonderful and everlasting relationship He is seeking with each of us. It reveals the true meaning of life, what lies ahead for mankind and the earth, and describes (in detail) where we'll be spending eternity. It also gives a revealing look into the realm of the supernatural (both good and evil) and shows why God must allow evil to exist. Finally, it explains what we need to do about all of this, as well as what we can expect – now and throughout eternity.

The second section takes an abrupt turn, exploring the realm of science, intellectual rebellion, and the inseparable link between the natural and supernatural worlds. It explores the awesomeness of God's creation, while at the same time, powerfully debunking the theory of evolution – Biblically, morally, logically, scientifically and at times, humorously. It explains the true origin of this theory, why it is one of the most significant issues of our day, some horrible atrocities which have resulted from it, and the reasons for its immense popularity. This section also reveals many absolutely amazing things about our world which most people are unaware of (such as two-thousand year-old electric batteries and recent dinosaurs).

The final chapter answers the question, "Is there intelligent life on other planets?" It also explains the reason for the increasing interest in the subject, as well as the various phenomena going on around us.

HOW TO READ THIS BOOK

This book has been written with Bible verses, scientific and historical facts, and a few thought provoking questions intermixed within the text. The information is quite varied and I chose not to use footnotes. This supporting information (which is in a smaller font shifted to the right) is not intended to be read at the same time as the basic text, as it often breaks a single sentence into multiple parts. The easiest way to read this book is by going through a section once—passing over the supporting information—then going through it a second time, covering everything.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

PART A -- GOD, LIFE, AND ETERNITY	4
I. A Land of Kings.	5
II. Who is God?	8
III. What is the Meaning of Life?	11
IV. Who and What is Satan?	24
V. Why Does God Allow Evil?	45
VI. What is Heaven?	50
VII. How Do We Get to Heaven?	57
VIII. What About People Who Have Never Had the Bible?	61
IX. What is Hell?	65
X. How Do We Get to Hell?	68
XI. So What Should You Do?	70
XII. So What Can You Expect?	100
XIII. What is God?	107
XIV. Conclusion	121
PART B – THE THEORY OF EVOLUTION VS. THE AWESOMENESS OF GOD	123
I. What You are About to Experience.	124
II. The Theory of Evolution Explained	126
III. How the Theory of Evolution Disagrees with the Bible.	129
IV. How the Theory of Evolution is Dangerous and Evil.	133
V. How the Theory of Evolution is Disproved by Both Science and Logic.	141
VI. The Fantasy of the Evolution Evidence and More Proof of the Bibles' Truth.	160
VII. If the Theory of Evolution is So Obviously False, Why Does the World Believe it and Why is this Battle Raging?	188
VIII. What Are the Goals of This Information?	191
IX. Conclusion and a Warning.	203
X. SETI and The Theory of Evolution: Is There Intelligent Life on Other Planets?	209
Sources of Information	216
Detailed Outline	223

PART – A

GOD

LIFE

&

ETERNITY

Chapter A-1

A LAND OF KINGS

Once upon a time in a land not so far away there were several kings. Each of these kings had dominion over a part of the land and ruled it as they saw fit. Some of their kingdoms were large and some were small, but there was one which completely dwarfed all the rest. This one was so immense that all of the other ones together could fit easily into a small corner of it. Battles were occasionally fought as the kings of these lesser kingdoms sought to increase the size of their territory or tried to exercise authority in some neutral area. No one, however, dared challenge the largest kingdom, as it and its king were, by far, the mightiest of them all. This larger kingdom was also incredibly wealthy. Its citizens not only had everything that they could possibly need, the king had provided so much gold, silver, and precious stones that they were as common as everyday rocks. This king was also an extremely wise, wonderful, and loving leader, and all of his subjects were totally content to live under his authority. He had gone to great lengths to make their lives wonderful, and had done it so well that the poorest person in his whole kingdom was better off than even the kings of these other kingdoms.

One day something terrible was discovered. There were two very powerful enemies preparing to come against these kingdoms. One was amassing in the mountains, back behind the mighty kingdom, and the other was amassing in the sea, which bordered all the smaller ones. When they would arrive could not be determined, but the result could. All but the largest kingdom would certainly perish. It was the only one strong enough to withstand their force. The smaller ones, even working together, would never survive.

As a result of this impending disaster, the mighty king sent messengers to all the kings of these smaller kingdoms. He invited them to become part of his empire. He told them that if they would come under his authority, he would not only provide all the protection they needed, he would also bless and care for them with all the riches of his kingdom. They would be given full citizenship--vested with all rights, privileges, and responsibilities--and would be blessed far more abundantly than they had ever achieved in their own little kingdoms. He also said if they chose to do this, he would seal the entire agreement with the official seal of the government, which no one could break.

Why did he do this? Well for one thing, this mighty king absolutely loved people. He dearly loved all of the subjects of his own kingdom, and he would be more than happy to bring in more. He also knew these kings needed his help, and he certainly had the resources to provide it. His kingdom was so large and so wealthy that he could easily bring all of these people in with no strain at all.

There was, however, one more reason for his offer. Like some of the lesser kings, he too was interested in more land. You see, at one time he had ruled it all. Many years before, there had been a rebellion, and all of these smaller kingdoms had broken away. The people wanted to be their own authority and had rejected his. He had not forced them to stay, and he would not force them to come back, but he would take advantage of this opportunity. With his offer, he also gave them two promises: First, if they would truly come back to him--truly accept his authority, abandoning any idea of running

a separate kingdom--he would totally forgive their rebellion, and it would never be mentioned again. Second, if they sincerely wanted a position of authority, then by earnestly and faithfully serving him as citizens of his kingdom, he would ultimately give them more than they ever had.

He told them that if his offer was acceptable, they were to come before him, remove their crowns, and formally accept him as their king. They were, however, to stay and rule their own kingdoms--subject to his authority--until the enemy advanced. He wanted time to prepare for their coming as well as to see how they were going to serve him. He told them that he would permanently hold off the enemy in the hills, but when the enemy from the sea moved in, they would have to come into the kingdom. He also promised them access to many of the kingdom's treasures immediately and said that they could come to him at any time with any needs they had. He would always be available.

Now, let's stop and take a closer look at this offer. What were these lesser kings being asked to give up, and what would they receive in return? The answer is "nothing" and "everything"! They were being asked to relinquish authority over a tiny, doomed kingdom in order to gain the love, acceptance, and forgiveness of this very wise, wonderful, and mighty ruler. They were to receive the protection and provision of his much larger, wealthier, and more powerful kingdom while being spared the horror of all that the enemy would do to them. Finally, they would be given the opportunity to earn even more authority than they were being asked to give up. They had everything to gain and nothing to lose.

So what did they do? What would you have done if you had been in their situation? More importantly, what are you going to do? You see, this story is a parable on life. It is about God and us and the wonderful offer that He is presenting to each one of us. He is the Mighty King who eternally rules the universe, and we are the lesser kings who are temporarily seeking to rule our own lives (or were, if we have already accepted His authority). God has a better plan and a better offer, in a kingdom which lasts forever, and He is trying to get us to accept it. I, formerly a lesser king, am now one of His messengers, and I am here to tell you that God is awesome, God is wonderful, and God wants you in His kingdom! It doesn't matter what you have in your life or what benefit it brings you, God is better! You will find more love, mercy and acceptance, more joy, peace, power, pleasure, significance, and security in a relationship with God than anywhere else in life.

I am also here to tell you that there is absolutely nothing that can keep this from happening--that can keep you from entering into this most blessed and everlasting relationship with God--except your will. There is no power in heaven, hell, or here on earth that can keep us away from God if we truly want Him. Nor is there anything that we have ever done for which He will not forgive us. The one and only true barrier which stands between God and man is desire. We must want Him with all of our hearts.

You will seek me and find me when you seek me with all your heart. Jeremiah 29:13

It is for this reason that the major objective of this book is to show you how absolutely wonderful God is, and to tell you of all the blessings which accompany a personal relationship with Him--both in this life and throughout eternity. In addition to this and many other strange and wonderful things about God, you are going to learn the true meaning of life, about the coming end of this world and the creation of another, about three phases of heaven, about interacting with the supernatural (both good and evil), and about how every bit of this fits together. You are going to learn of life and death, of love and hate, angels and demons, knowledge and power, and of physical and spiritual warfare--past, present, and future.

On a far more urgent matter, you are also going to learn that we do not have an unlimited amount of time to accept our Mighty King's offer, and if we miss our opportunity, we will suffer some

very severe consequences. These consequences--represented in the parable by the two encroaching enemies--are "death" and "judgment," and none of us knows when they are scheduled to arrive. "Judgment" is the enemy in the hills behind God's mighty kingdom, and it is growing with each and every sin we commit. God is temporarily standing between us, trying to get us to accept Him as Lord and Savior, so the protection can become permanent. "Death" is the enemy in the sea, and there stands nothing but time between us. No, accepting God may not stop death's arrival, but it will transform it into the most wonderful blessing we will ever experience. It will move us instantaneously into the city of heaven--a very real and wonderful place. (A physical description of heaven is included in this book.)

So venture on and enjoy. It is my sincere prayer that you will be as blessed by reading this book as I have been by writing it.

Chapter A-2

WHO IS GOD?

GOD “THE TRINITY”

When we refer to God, we are sometimes referring to the “Holy Trinity:” one God,

Hear, O Israel: The LORD our God, the LORD is one. Deuteronomy 6:4

creator of the universe,

For in six days the LORD made the heavens and the earth, the sea, and all that is in them, but he rested on the seventh day. Exodus 20:11

who exists in three persons—three distinct personalities.

Then God said, “Let us make man in our image, in our likeness,- - - So God created man in his own image, in the image of God he created him; male and female he created them. Genesis 1:26,27

(The plurality of God is indicated by the words “us” and “our,” and the singularity of God is indicated by the words “his” and “he”.)

The LORD says to my Lord: “Sit at my right hand until I make your enemies a footstool for your feet.” Psalm 110:1

The “Holy Trinity” consists of God the Father, God the Son (Jesus),

Who has established all the ends of the earth? What is his name, and the name of his son? Proverbs 30:4

The high priest said to him, “I charge you under oath by the living God: Tell us if you are the Christ, the Son of God.” “Yes it is as you say,” Jesus replied. Matthew 26:63

and God the Spirit (the Holy Spirit).

Yet they rebelled and grieved his Holy Spirit. Isaiah 63:10

Do not cast me from your presence or take your Holy Spirit from me. Psalm 51:11

Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. Matthew 28:19,20

GOD THE FATHER

God the Father is called “God,” “Lord,” “The Creator,” “God Most High,” and “The Almighty.”

GOD THE SON

God the Son (Jesus) is the Father's one and only Son. He is one with the Father, and He is also God.

For to us a child is born, to us a son is given, and the government will be on his shoulders. And he will be called Wonderful Counselor, Mighty God, Everlasting Father, Prince of Peace. Isaiah 9:6

For God so loved the world that he gave his one and only Son, that whoever believes in him shall not perish but have eternal life. John 3:16

I and the Father are one. John 10:30

He is--as are the Father and Holy Spirit--eternal and immortal and was involved in creating the universe.

In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was with God in the beginning. Through him all things were made; without him nothing was made that has been made. John 1:1-3

Jesus left heaven to become human for a time (born to a virgin and conceived by the Holy Spirit),

Therefore the LORD himself will give you a sign: The virgin will be with child and will give birth to a son, and will call him Immanuel. (Immanuel means "God with us.") Isaiah 7:14

. . . Joseph son of David, do not be afraid to take Mary home as your wife, because what is conceived in her is from the Holy Spirit. Matthew 1:20

The Word became flesh and made his dwelling among us. John 1:14

to ultimately die as a sacrifice to pay for all of mankind's rebellion against Him.

Surely he took up our infirmities and carried our sorrows, yet we considered him stricken by God, smitten by him, and afflicted. But he was pierced for our transgressions, he was crushed for our iniquities; the punishment that brought us peace was upon him, and by his wounds we are healed. We all, like sheep, have gone astray, each of us has turned to his own way; and the LORD has laid on him the iniquity of us all. Isaiah 53:4-6

But God demonstrates his own love for us in this: While we were still sinners, Christ died for us. Romans 5:8

He was later brought back to life,

For Christ died for sins once for all, the righteous for the unrighteous, to bring you to God. He was put to death in the body but made alive by the Spirit, . . . 1 Peter 3:18

appeared to hundreds of people over a period of forty days (appearing to five hundred people on one occasion),

After his suffering, he showed himself to these men and gave many convincing proofs that he was alive. He appeared to them over a period of forty days and spoke about the kingdom of God. Acts 1:3

For what I received I passed on to you as of first importance: that Christ died for our sins according to the scriptures, that he was buried, that he was raised on the third day according to the Scriptures, and that he appeared to Peter; and then to the Twelve. After that, he appeared to more than five hundred of the brothers at the same time, . . . 1 Corinthians 15:3-6

and then went back to heaven, where He again sits at the right hand of God the Father.

*After the Lord Jesus had spoken to them, he was taken up into heaven and he sat at the right hand of God.
Mark 16:19*

While Jesus was on earth, He taught about life and eternity, ministered to people in many ways, and performed a great number of miracles--to show that He was God. He cured people of leprosy, paralysis, deformities, blindness, and deafness. He enabled crippled people to walk, mute people to talk, and dead people to come back to life. He turned water into wine, drove demons out of people, and caused fishing nets to be overfilled with fish. He fed four thousand people on one occasion and five thousand on another with a very small amount of food. He stopped a raging storm, commanded a fig tree to die, walked on the surface of water, and instantaneously transported a boat to shore.

Leprosy (Luke 17:11-19) / Paralysis (Mark 2:1-12) / Deformations (Mark 3:1-5) / Blindness (Mark 8:22-26) / Deafness (Mark 7:31-37) / Crippled (John 5:1-9) / Mute (Matthew 9:32-33) / Dead to life (Matthew 9:18-26) / Water to wine (John 2:1-11) / Demons (Mark 5:1-20) / Fishing nets (Luke 5:4-11) / 4000 fed (Mark 8:1-9) / 5000 fed (Mark 6:38-44) / Storm (Luke 8:22-25) / Fig tree (Mark 11:12-14) / Walked on water & moved boat to shore. (John 6:19-21)

GOD THE HOLY SPIRIT

God the Holy Spirit might best be described by His mission. In Biblical times He guided, instructed, and admonished God's chosen people (the Israelites), inspired the prophets (who were their teachers and often their leaders), and was active in Jesus' life while on earth. He also inspired and controlled the writing of the Bible and its ultimate compilation. He continues His mission today, as He comes to reside with each person who truly accepts His authority and forgiveness. He comes to teach us His ways and to help us become all that He wants us to be; i.e., righteous, loving, kind-hearted people, who are faithful, patient, peaceful, gentle, joyful, and self-controlled. He also oversees and accomplishes His evangelical mission--getting as many people as possible into His kingdom--through the church. (The church is any and all people who have already accepted Him.)

Guided (Isaiah 63:11) / Instructed (Nehemiah 9:20) / Admonished (Nehemiah 9:30) / Inspired prophets (Zechariah 7:12) / Active in Jesus' life (Luke 1:34,35 & Romans 8:11) / Inspired and controlled writing of the Bible (2 Timothy 3:16 & 2 Samuel 23:2) / Teaches us (John 14:26) / Helps us live righteously (Romans 8:5-9) / Helps us become what He wants us to be (Galatians 5:16-25) / Oversees and uses church (Acts 20:28 & Acts 13:2,4)

Chapter A-3

WHAT IS THE MEANING OF LIFE?

We were created to become the eternal children of God--to be loved, blessed, and guided by the Creator of the universe throughout eternity. We are not merely a part of creation--some insignificant speck in the cosmos. We have been given life (far above all other life on earth) for the incredibly awesome privilege of becoming members of the family of God.

So God created man in his own image, in the image of God he created him; male and female he created them. Genesis 1:27

Yet to all who received him, to those who believed in his name, he gave the right to become children of God . . . John 1:12

We, however, are unable to achieve this goal. It is because of sin (rebellion against God and His laws) that we die, and because of our own sin, we are subject to eternal punishment in hell.

When God created Adam (the first human), He created him to be immortal--never to die. Adam, however, directly disobeyed God. He committed the first sin. This not only introduced sin into the world, it also brought death. God had commanded that the penalty for sin would be death, so when Adam sinned, he was no longer immortal, and neither are the rest of us because we have all sinned.

And the Lord God commanded the man, "You are free to eat from any tree in the garden; but you must not eat from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, for when you eat of it you will surely die." Genesis 2:16,17

"Because you listened to your wife and ate from the tree about which I commanded you, "You must not eat of it," Cursed is the ground because of you; through painful toil you will eat of it all the days of your life. It will produce thorns and thistles for you, and you will eat the plants of the field. By the sweat of your brow you will eat your food until you return to the ground, since from it you were taken; for dust you are and to dust you will return." Genesis 3:17-19

Therefore, just as sin entered the world through one man, and death through sin, and in this way death came to all men, because all sinned . . . Romans 5:12

Death, though, means more than this. God speaks of two deaths. The first is when our bodies die (physical death), and the second is eternal punishment in hell (spiritual death). Every person ever born--except for Jesus--has sinned, and because of this we are all subject to the second death.

. . . for all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God, . . . Romans 3:23

For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord. Romans 6:23

The lake of fire is the second death. If anyone's name was not found written in the book of life, he was thrown into the lake of fire. Revelation 20:14,15

Once again, we can look to Adam for the root cause of all this. When he sinned, it not only brought death into the world, it also caused all of us--his descendants--to be born with a sinful nature.

Surely I was sinful at birth, sinful from the time my mother conceived me. Psalm 51:5

Never again will I curse the ground because of man, even though every inclination of his heart is evil from childhood. Genesis 8:21

Our desire is not to live for God or anyone else but, rather, for ourselves. We come into this world pursuing our own interests, wanting our own way, and we fail to give God His rightful position as Lord of our lives. We try to be our own gods. Yes, this is sin! His very first commandment tells us that we are to have no other gods.

I am the Lord your God, . . . You shall have no other gods before me. Exodus 20:2,3

We are to have nothing in our lives--no person, activity, possession, or desire--which competes with God (in what we love, value, or yield our decisions). It's OK to love what He gives us. He loves us and wants to make us happy, but like any loving father, He doesn't want us to love His gifts more than we love Him.

Take a look at some of our other sins. If we have ever misused the Lord's name (ever spoken His name if we weren't talking to Him or about Him), ever dishonored our parents, treated someone unkindly, enviously desired what someone else had, or ever looked at another person out of lust (other than our own spouse),

You shall not misuse the name of the LORD your God, . . . Exodus 20:7

Honor your father and your mother. . . Exodus 20:12

'Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind.' This is the first and greatest commandment. And the second is like it: 'Love your neighbor as yourself. Matthew 22:37-39

You shall not covet your neighbor's house. . . . or anything that belongs to your neighbor: Exodus 20:17

You shall not commit adultery. Exodus 20:14

But I tell you that anyone who looks at a woman lustfully has already committed adultery with her in his heart. Matthew 5:28

then we have broken God's most basic laws, and are, therefore, law breakers.

For whoever keeps the whole law and yet stumbles at just one point is guilty of breaking all of it. James 2:10

If we are law breakers, then we are subject to the penalty of the law--"the second death." God doesn't use a grading scale. We don't get to heaven by being "seventy percent good." It's "one-hundred percent" or nothing. We are either perfect and sinless, or we're guilty and condemned.

For the wages of sin is death, Romans 6:23

If this seems severe--that God would condemn us to hell for breaking just one law--we must also realize that the forgiveness of our sins and the promise of eternity in heaven are simply gifts to be accepted (extremely costly gifts to God).

For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord. Romans 6:23

Jesus Himself stepped into our world to be tortured and killed by crucifixion--the cruelest form of capital punishment ever conceived by man--to take the punishment for our sins. He paid a severe price

for our imperfections.

But he was pierced for our transgressions, he was crushed for our iniquities; the punishment that brought us peace was upon him, and by his wounds we are healed. We all, like sheep, have gone astray, each of us has turned to his own way; and the LORD has laid on him the iniquity of us all. Isaiah 53:4-6

It was the third hour when they crucified him. Mark 15:25

We may, of course, wonder: “What’s the point?” If we sin, we’re condemned, but if we’re condemned, we can be forgiven. To answer this question, we need to emphasize the “we can” be forgiven. To be forgiven, we must accept Jesus as our Lord and Savior. We must make Him part of our lives. We must acknowledge that He is here (that He exists and is accessible), admit that we need Him, and accept that He is able to help us. We must enter into a personal relationship with God! This is why He gave us His laws. They not only give us guidelines to live by, they also show us our need for Him--our need of forgiveness.

Therefore no one will be declared righteous in his sight by observing the law; rather, through the law we become conscious of sin. Romans 3:20

Before continuing, let’s examine why God had to suffer and die for our sins. Why couldn’t He just forgive us? Why did He have to become human and go through this horrible torment? To answer this question, we must first understand a couple of things about His nature. He is absolutely perfect and totally just (and always will be).

The LORD is righteous in all his ways and loving toward all he has made. Psalm 145:17

He is the Rock, his works are perfect, and all his ways are just. A faithful God who does no wrong, upright and just is he. Deuteronomy 32:4

I the LORD do not change. Malachi 3:6

He has given us His laws--whether written in the Bible, or placed within our hearts--

Indeed, when Gentiles, who do not have the law, do by nature things required by the law, they are a law for themselves, even though they do not have the law, since they show that the requirements of the law are written on their hearts, their consciences also bearing witness, and their thoughts now accusing, now even defending them. Romans 2:14,15

and commanded that the penalty for breaking them would be death. Sin must be punished! God’s very nature requires it. To ignore our sin or to forget the just penalty which it requires would mean that He is not perfect, not just, and not consistent. But He is! So, He had to provide some way for us to escape punishment which was not in violation of His perfect and just nature. He commanded that for our forgiveness, there must be a sacrifice--“a shedding of blood.”

In fact, the law requires that nearly everything be cleansed with blood, and without the shedding of blood there is no forgiveness. Hebrews 9:22

We, however, have no way of offering this sacrifice, for once we sin, we die to Him. Our spirit--the eternal part of us--is dead to God.

As for you, you were dead in your transgressions and sins, . . . Ephesians 2:1

He, therefore, had to provide the sacrifice for us. He provided “Himself.” This was why He came to die on the cross. He was the sacrifice that paid for all of mankind’s sin (everyone who would accept Him). He was the only sinless human, thus, the only acceptable sacrifice to God the Father. Jesus is like a father who pays his child’s speeding ticket--to keep him out of jail. Justice is served, the father

suffers, and the child is spared the consequences.

Such a high priest meets our need—one who is holy, blameless, pure, set apart from sinners, exalted above the heavens. Unlike the other high priests, he does not need to offer sacrifices day after day, first for his own sins, and then for the sins of the people. He sacrificed for their sins once for all when he offered himself. Hebrews 7:26,27

By believing in Jesus (the entire Biblical account), by acknowledging that He is God,

All scripture is God-breathed, and is useful for teaching, rebuking, correcting and training in righteousness. Timothy 3:16

In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was with God in the beginning. Through him all things were made; without him nothing was made that has been made. . . . The Word became flesh and made his dwelling among us. John 1:1-3,14

and by accepting Him as our Lord and Savior (accepting His authority over our lives and putting faith in His sacrifice to save us),

Repent, then, and turn to God, so that your sins may be wiped out, . . . Acts 3:19

Not everyone who says to me, 'Lord, Lord,' will enter the kingdom of heaven, but only he who does the will of my Father who is in heaven. Matthew 7:21

His death makes us righteous in His eyes and reconciles us to Him.

This righteousness from God comes through faith in Jesus Christ to all who believe. There is no difference, for all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God, and are justified freely by his grace through the redemption that came by Christ Jesus. God presented him as a sacrifice of atonement, through faith in his blood. Romans 3:22-25

We are again alive to God! This is referred to in the Bible as being “born again.” Our spirits must be alive to God in order to get to heaven and to escape eternity in hell.

In reply Jesus declared, “I tell you the truth, no one can see the kingdom of God unless he is born again.” John 3:3

If anyone’s name was not found written in the book of life, he was thrown into the lake of fire. Revelation 20:15

Then they will go away to eternal punishment, but the righteous to eternal life. Matthew 25:46

So, the meaning of life is this: We are to accept Jesus as our personal Lord and Savior. We are to enter into this most blessed and eternal relationship with our Creator God, which He has now made possible and now freely offers. We are to assume the awesome and incredible position of being children of the Creator of the universe and are to spend the rest of our lives--now and throughout eternity (in paradise)--living for, loving, and being loved by Him. Our entire lives are to revolve around God and His will.

How great is the love the Father has lavished on us, that we should be called children of God! 1 John 3:1

Jesus answered him, “I tell you the truth, today you will be with me in paradise.” Luke 23:43

Now all has been heard; here is the conclusion of the matter: Fear God and keep his commandments, for this is the whole duty of man. Ecclesiastes 12:13

Now, if this doesn’t fit our plans, if we can’t see “just turning our lives over to God,” then we need to stop and consider a couple of things. First, what are we living for and how long will it (this

purpose) last? How is age or the insecurity we face socially, politically, economically, and militarily going to affect our goals? How about death? We can't be so nearsighted as to get lost in today and tomorrow. We need to think about where we want to be in ninety-five years and in a million and ninety-five.

Second, if we're worried about not having our needs met, we need to remember something. We're talking about God--Almighty God--Creator, Sustainer, Ruler of the universe, Savior of the world (of all who will accept Him). Who could possibly know our needs better, be more perfectly able to meet them, or have a stronger desire to do so than Almighty God, who created us, gave us these needs in the first place, and loves us so much, that He was willing to die for our sins?

He who did not spare his own Son, but gave him up for us all—how will he not also, along with him, graciously give us all things? Romans 8:32

God wants us to come to Him not only for forgiveness but to obey His authority. He wants to guide us. He has a plan for our lives and promises that if we will fulfill it, we will have joy in this life, followed by an absolutely blessed eternity in heaven;

For we are Gods' workmanship, created in Christ Jesus to do good works, which God prepared in advance for us to do. Ephesians 2:10

But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, patience, kindness, goodness, faithfulness, gentleness and self control. Galatians 5:22,23

Not everyone who says to me, 'Lord, Lord,' will enter the kingdom of heaven, but only he who does the will of my Father who is in heaven. Matthew 7:21

and when God makes a promise, He cannot break it (because He is perfect). Did you catch that? Almighty God--Creator of heaven and earth--has made us promises that He cannot break!

God is not a man, that he should lie, nor a son of man, that he should change his mind. Does he speak and then not act? Does he promise and not fulfill? Numbers 23:19

He has also promised us eternity in hell if we reject Him and His sacrifice (if we reject His payment for our sins), and again, He cannot break His promise. We can't deceive ourselves into thinking that our loving God won't send us to hell. He died on the cross to keep it from happening, but it is up to us to accept it.

. . . for all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God, . . . Romans 3:23

For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord. Romans 6:23

The lake of fire is the second death. If anyone's name was not found written in the book of life, he was thrown into the lake of fire. Revelation 20:14,15

Then they will go away to eternal punishment, but the righteous to eternal life. Matthew 25:46

At this point, we may wonder: "Why didn't He just make us perfect in the first place?" That's the way we're going to be in heaven.

But you have come to Mount Zion, to the heavenly Jerusalem, the city of the living God. You have come to thousands upon thousands of angels in joyful assembly, to the church of the firstborn, whose names are written in heaven. You have come to God, the judge of all men, to the spirits of righteous men made perfect, to Jesus the mediator of a new covenant, and to the sprinkled blood that speaks a better word than the blood of Abel. Hebrews 12:22-24

Why did He create us with the ability to sin? Why do we have free-will--the ability to desire what is

good or evil and the freedom to act upon that desire? Why do we have the ability to accept or reject Him?

Today, if you hear his voice, do not harden your hearts. Hebrews 4:7

The answer to all these questions is simple: He wanted children, not puppets or robots. How many of us would be willing to trade our children for something less? God loves us and He wants us to love Him too, but love forced is not love. He has, therefore, given us this ability and this freedom--along with an overwhelming need for Him in all aspects of life. God did not make us self-sufficient. We are not equipped to make it through this life and into the next without Him. His plan is for us to realize our need, call upon Him and, thus, be saved.

And everyone who calls on the name of the Lord will be saved. Acts 2:21

See, we call upon Him. It's our choice. We choose to accept Him as God.

You will seek me and find me when you seek me with all of your heart. Jeremiah 29:13

Seek the LORD while he may be found; call on him while he is near. Isaiah 55:6

Everyone who calls on the name of the Lord will be saved. Romans 10:13

We go to Him for help, but before we do, we must first believe, acknowledge, and accept that He is God--that He is our God. If we didn't, then we wouldn't be asking Him for help. Whatever our needs--present, eternal, or both--God will take advantage of them to save us.

After we accept Him and begin to rely upon Him to meet our needs (and to guide us through this oh-so-messed-up world), we experience more and more of the incredible love which He has for us. As we do, our love just naturally grows. (When we were born, did the love which we have for our parents not also begin with need? So it is when we are born again.) This is why God doesn't reveal Himself to us personally until we come to Him in faith. He wants us coming out of need, not coercion. He doesn't want us feeling compelled into the relationship by His presence.

There is an important point here--about God's care and provision in this life--which needs to be emphasized. While He absolutely promises to take care of us--mentally, physically, and spiritually--

And my God will meet all your needs according to his glorious riches in Christ Jesus. Philippians 4:19

--and to always be with us,

... God has said, "Never will I leave you; never will I forsake you." Hebrews 13:5

He does not promise to make all our problems go away. Christians sometimes make the mistake of leading others to believe that He does. Then, when they join a church and their problems don't go away, or when they see people who have truly accepted Jesus, suffering heartaches and hardships, they become disillusioned and walk away. They leave before ever entering into a relationship with Him, or finding out the wonderful ways He does help in times of trouble.

But I will sing of your strength, in the morning I will sing of your love; for you are my fortress, my refuge in times of trouble. Psalm 59:16

This, no doubt, raises a question: If Almighty God loves us so much that He willingly died on the cross to forgive our sins and make us His children,

He who did not spare his own Son, but gave him up for us all—how will he not also, along with him, graciously give us all things? Romans 8:32

and He has the power to end all of our problems, then why doesn't He do it? Why would He ever allow His children to suffer? The answer to this question is "our world." We are surrounded by sin. We live in a fallen world, filled with sinful people, causing a world of trouble.

I have told you these things, so that in me you may have peace. In this world you will have trouble. But take heart! I have overcome the world. John 16:33

The only way that He could possibly protect us from most of the problems in this life would be to shield us from all the people. He would have to confine us to a deserted island somewhere, where we would then suffer from severe loneliness. Unfortunately, even this wouldn't end all of our other problems. Aside from the fact we would still be faced with death, disease, and decay--which came into the world with sin--we would still be stuck with ourselves. You see, oftentimes we Christians suffer because of our own sin. Yes, God totally forgives every sin we commit the moment we confess, repent, and ask Him to do so, and there is no sin which will ever be remembered in heaven.

For as high as the heavens are above the earth, so great is his love for those who fear him; as far as the east is from the west, so far has he removed our transgressions from us. Psalm 103:11,12

There are, however, other consequences. Continuing to sin after we have accepted Jesus still causes all kinds of problems. It hampers the closeness of our relationship with Him and may hinder His help in times of need. It makes us detrimental to the expansion of His kingdom and results in the loss of eternal treasure. It can also wreak terrible, and sometimes, irreparable (temporal) damage in our lives and in the lives of the people around us. Having a wreck while driving drunk can be forgiven by God, but that won't heal anybody, buy any new cars, or keep anyone out of jail. Smoking, drinking, and eating unhealthy food all one's life can be forgiven by God, but that won't stop the onslaught of disease. Sin is destructive. It always hurts us, someone else, or both. That's why God hates it. Don't we also hate what hurts our children? The unfortunate reality is, that in order for God to end all of our problems, He would have to let us die and take us to heaven (which is going to happen once we have fulfilled our earthly mission).

God is not helpless, though, when it comes to His children's earthly problems. Like everything else in our lives, He sovereignly uses them for our benefit.

And we know that in all things God works for the good of those who love him, who have been called according to his purpose. Romans 8:28

In addition to the individual blessings which He so often brings out of our troubles--which are rarely understood until "after the fact"--there is one blessing which is immediately obvious, overall, and constant. Remember that God's ultimate goal is to develop a loving Father and child relationship with each of us. If He could remove all of our problems and could give us everything we would ever need the moment we accepted Him, when would we ever call upon Him? How would our relationship develop? What if our children never had to call upon us for anything; what would our relationship be like? What if they never needed to be held when they were sick, hugged when they were scared, never needed a broken toy fixed, a skinned knee bandaged, or a tear wiped away? What if they could do their own homework, build their own bicycles, fix their own cars, and find and provide for their own way? What would our relationship be like?

It is by providing for our needs as they arise, as opposed to all at once, that God draws us near to Him. He is always available--ready, willing, and able to help us through each and every situation.

He wants to provide us with knowledge, understanding, and wisdom to help us to live each day successfully. He offers us strength when we're weak, encouragement when we're struggling, comfort when we're hurting, and an inner peace that will carry us through the worst of circumstances. He also wants to guide us through every step of this life (and around most of its dangers).

For the LORD gives wisdom, and from his mouth come knowledge and understanding. Proverbs 2:6

I can do everything through him who gives me strength. Philippians 4:13

May our Lord Jesus Christ himself and God our Father, who loved us and by his grace gave us eternal encouragement and good hope, encourage your hearts and strengthen you in every good deed and word. 2 Thessalonians 2:16,17

Praise be to the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of compassion and the God of all comfort, who comforts us in all our troubles, so that we can comfort those in any trouble with the comfort we ourselves have received from God. 2 Corinthians 1:3,4

Do not be anxious about anything, but in everything, by prayer and petition, with thanksgiving, present your requests to God. And the peace of God, which transcends all understanding, will guard your hearts and your minds in Christ Jesus. Philippians 4:6,7

And my God will meet all your needs according to his glorious riches in Christ Jesus. Philippians 4:19

This will only happen, though, once we have accepted Him and are earnestly trying to live according to His will. He will always love us, but to bless us while we are living in sin would do nothing to deter us from it, and again, sin always hurts us, and usually the people around us too.

God loves us, and He wants a personal, intimate, and eternal relationship with us starting now. He doesn't want to be a stranger to us when we get to heaven. In fact, the Bible tells us that one of the things which He will say to people before they are cast into hell will be, "I never knew you!"

Then I will tell them plainly, 'I never knew you. Away from me, you evildoers!' Matthew 7:23

God's love is also a perfect love. He's not like so many earthly fathers who try to provide for their children materially but never realize that what they need most is a father. He offers us Himself, and as it is with our earthly families, no amount of possessions could ever bring such joy and happiness or make up for the loss of such a relationship. Thus, while He may not give us riches (at least, not in the financial sense), He will take care of us perfectly from the eternal perspective.

Unfortunately, rather than calling upon Him with our needs, our society is doing everything it can to get rid of Him. We have removed the Bible, prayer, the Ten Commandments, and any mention of Jesus from our schools, government, and from most of the public realm. (Remember when Christmas was about Christ?) We may still be able to use the generic term "god," but if we begin to elaborate about who "god" is, society either freaks out, shuts us off, or gets up in arms about "separation of church and state" (a phrase which is not contained in the United States Constitution).

This is a mistake! Attempting to rid ourselves of God not only ignores the eternal problem of hell, it also creates all kinds of problems here and now--problems which are tearing our society to pieces. Technology may be improving, and knowledge may be increasing, but look at people's lives. Look at what we're doing to ourselves. We could come up with all kinds of statistics showing the condition of our society, but do we really need statistics to know we have a problem? Just look around.

For now, though, rather than exploring the problems associated with a godless society, let's take a look at it from a personal perspective--what it means to us as individuals. If we are going to reject

God, there are many questions that must be answered and many voids that must be filled. We can't just get rid of Him; we have to replace Him with something.

First, if not God, what is the purpose and focus of our lives? What do we live for? We all choose something as most important and ultimately all of our decisions will revolve around this thing. It may be the "almighty dollar," our possessions, a job, a relationship, or whatever, but something is going to rule our lives. If we reject God, we must settle for something less -- something which has been created, and something which will someday disappear.

Second, if we don't put our faith in God, what security do we have? What in this life is certain? Can our investments be any more secure than our federal government, with its multi-trillion dollar deficit? Can our possessions be adequately and unceasingly protected from theft, loss, and deterioration? Are we and the people we rely upon guaranteed to be here and healthy tomorrow? Think of all the things that could happen, any one of which could instantly change or end our lives: accidents, disease, heart failure, stroke, violent crime, natural disasters, even something as simple as choking. Think about how little warning any of these may give.

No, being a Christian will not provide security for earthly treasures, and it won't protect us from physical death. God doesn't promise us a healthy, wealthy, and trouble-free life here on earth. He doesn't even hint at it. What He does promise is that once we accept Him, all things will work together for our eternal good,

And we know that in all things God works for the good of those who love him, who have been called according to his purpose. Romans 8:28

all the treasures which we store up in heaven (by living for Him here) will be ours forever,

Provide purses for yourselves that will not wear out, a treasure in heaven that will not be exhausted, where no thief comes near and no moth destroys. Luke 12:33

and death will be the most wonderful thing that ever happens to us.

For to me, to live is Christ and to die is gain. Philippians 1:21

Now, this is security (which sure makes life a lot easier to enjoy).

Third, if we don't view our significance from God's perspective, then why are we important? Is it because of money, a title, a car or house? Is it what we do or what we wear? Are we really no more important than what we own, do, or can afford to buy? These things are even temporary. Our money can disappear (investment failure, medical expenses, or lawsuit), we're all going to grow old and retire, and our possessions are wearing out while we pay for them. What happens when we lose these things, are we worthless? God says that we are of value because we have been created in His image to become His children and once we are saved, because we are a part of His plan. We are eternally important, each with our own individual gifts, talents, and pre-ordained jobs to do.

For we are God's workmanship, created in Christ Jesus to do good works, which God prepared in advance for us to do. Ephesians 2:10

Fourth, if not to God, where do we go for help? We're going to need help! Again, we were not created self-sufficient. Do we go to other people--to other sinful, fallible, messed-up creatures like ourselves? Do we go to chemicals--like alcohol and drugs, or to other diversions--like sleep, work, food, or shopping? Realistically, don't most of the things people turn to for help end up becoming part of the problem? [Psychology, if it is grounded entirely upon Biblical principles, may be extremely beneficial, but I wouldn't step one foot inside a non-Biblically based counseling center. Most of the so-

called help available in these places is a bunch of atheistic gibberish which comes ultimately from the pit of hell.

Sigmund Freud (1856-1939) --who is applauded as having “greatly advanced the field of psychology” was a professing atheist who regularly participated in occultic activities (along with his associate, Carl Jung). Freudian psychology was also greatly influenced by the Theory of Evolution (an utterly ridiculous lie). Building upon the theory (lie) that humans have inherited characteristics from our ‘non-human ancestors,’ Freud developed theories to explain why ‘modern humans’ behave the way we do. (He suggested that if we act like animals, it’s because our ancestors were.) [19N] [52]

Where is the wise man? Where is the scholar? Where is the philosopher of this age? Has not God made foolish the wisdom of the world? 1 Corinthians 1:20

We know that we are children of God, and that the whole world is under the control of the evil one. 1 John 5:19

Besides, understanding why we’re messed up may not tell us anything other than, it’s OK to be this way,

Forgetting what is behind and straining toward what is ahead, I press on toward the goal to win the prize for which God has called me heavenward in Christ Jesus. All of us who are mature should take such a view of things. Philippians 3:13-15

and most of the time spent “getting in touch with ourselves” would be better spent getting in touch with God. After all, we’re where the problem is; He’s the cure!

So do not fear; for I am with you; do not be dismayed, for I am your God. I will strengthen you and help you; I will uphold you with my righteous right hand. Isaiah 41:10

Fifth, if we don’t seek happiness and contentment from God, if we don’t attain these things through Him according to His will, then how? What will make us happy? Will wealth? Are the richest people you know the happiest, or does the accumulation of wealth simply create an insatiable desire for more? How about our jobs? Some people are happy with their jobs (some polls estimate it as low as ten percent), but nobody works all the time, and there is always the possibility that circumstances will change. Besides, we are all going to retire. How about alcohol and drugs? Nothing really needs to be said about these--the aftermath of the pleasure--whether it be addiction, drunk driving, verbal or physical abuse of another person, or health problems, something is wrong when our pleasure harms or endangers us and/or other people.

How about our relationships, can they bring us happiness? Unfortunately, now that we are taking God out of the picture, our relationships--one of the most precious and wonderful gifts that He has given us for joy and happiness--are some of the major weapons with which we are tearing each other apart. Since we have ceased to accept His control over and, thus, His help in our relationships, look at how many people are suffering. How many people have been hurt by a supposed ‘loved one’ through abuse (mental, physical, or sexual), rejection, divorce, abandonment, or immoral relationships?

Finally, if we are going to get rid of God, where do we get our laws? God’s laws are not terrible and restrictive. He loves us, and He knows what’s best. Is our society better off now that we are deciding for ourselves what is right or wrong? Imagine what our world would be like if we obeyed Him. If we worshiped God above all else and could never lose our reason for living, how would that affect us? How many suicides would there be?

I am the LORD your God . . . You shall have no other gods before me. Exodus 20:2,3

If we honored the Sabbath--reserved a day to rest and worship God (to remind us of what is important and what is not)--how much less stress would we be under? How many fewer heart attacks would there be?

Remember the Sabbath day by keeping it holy. Six days you shall labor and do all your work, but the seventh day is a Sabbath to the LORD your God. Exodus 20:8

If we honored our parents, grandparents, and other elders, how much more love would there be in families? How many heartaches would be prevented by children following rules and obeying authority? How much better would we know how to honor our Heavenly Father?

Honor your father and your mother. . . Exodus 20:12

Young men, in the same way be submissive to those who are older. All of you, clothe yourself with humility toward one another, because God opposes the proud but gives grace to the humble. 1 Peter 5:5

If we adhered to God's sexual standards, how many people would be dying from AIDS or have any of the twenty-plus sexually transmitted diseases ravaging people today? How many unmarried pregnancies would there be? How many abortions? How many people would be devastated by incest or rape?

Because of this, God gave them over to shameful lusts. Even their women exchanged natural relations for unnatural ones. In the same way the men also abandoned natural relations with women and were inflamed with lust for one another. Men committed indecent acts with other men, and received in themselves the due penalty for their perversion. Romans 1:26,27

If, however, the charge is true and no proof of the girl's virginity can be found, she shall be brought to the door of her father's house and there the men of the town shall stone her to death. She has done a disgraceful thing in Israel by being promiscuous while still in her father's house. You must purge the evil from among you. If a man is found sleeping with another man's wife, both the man who slept with her and the woman must die. You must purge the evil from Israel. . . . But if out in the country a man happens to meet a girl pledged to be married and rapes her, only the man who has done this shall die. Do nothing to the girl; . . . Deuteronomy 22:20-22, 25-26

If nobody ever got drunk or high, how many addicts would there be? How many people would be killed or injured because of people driving under the influence? How many people would get drunk and abuse their loved ones?

So let us put aside the deeds of darkness and put on the armor of light. Let us behave decently, as in the daytime, not in orgies and drunkenness, not in sexual immorality and debauchery, not in dissension and jealousy. Romans 13:12,13

If nobody got divorced, how many people would be suffering because of it and how many children's worlds would be shattered?

"Haven't you read," he replied, "that at the beginning the Creator 'made them male and female,' and said, 'For this reason a man will leave his father and mother and be united to his wife, and the two will become one flesh'? So they are no longer two, but one. Therefore what God has joined together, let not man separate. Matthew 19:4-6

If people were honest (they didn't steal, cheat, lie, or deceive), how many human and material resources could be freed-up for the betterment of our world, rather than being spent monitoring, guarding, and fighting against each other?

Do not steal. Do not lie. Do not deceive one another. Leviticus 19:11

*Is it not the rich who are exploiting you? Are they not the ones who are dragging you into court?
James 2:6*

If we loved God the way He loves us, if we treated each other the way we would like to be treated, if we truly obeyed God in every way, what would our world be like?

'Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind.' This is the first and greatest commandment. And the second is like it: 'Love your neighbor as yourself.' Matthew 22:37-39

God gave us laws to live by--guidelines for a successful and enjoyable life--but we are abandoning them, and the consequences are mounting. We can argue with God, we can ignore His laws, we can even deny His existence, but we're still suffering the consequences. The condition of our society is horrible, it's continually worsening, and there are no indications that it is going to do anything except continue its descent. Unfortunately, without God in our lives individually, we don't hit bottom until we drop into hell.

Do you not know that the wicked will not inherit the kingdom of God? Do not be deceived: Neither the sexually immoral nor idolaters nor adulterers nor male prostitutes nor homo-sexual offenders nor thieves nor the greedy nor drunkards nor slanderers nor swindlers will inherit the kingdom of God. And that is what some of you were. But you were washed, you were sanctified, you were justified in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ and by the Spirit of our God. 1 Corinthians 6:9-11

Then they will go away to eternal punishment, but the righteous to eternal life. Matthew 25:46

It's important to mention here, that even though God is allowing us to do this to ourselves and He will send people to hell--this is not His desire. He wants every one of us to be saved, and He suffered a horrible death in order to make it possible.

The Lord is not slow in keeping his promise, as some understand slowness. He is patient with you, not wanting anyone to perish, but everyone to come to repentance. 2 Peter 3:9

It must, though, be our decision. God is not going to force anyone to accept Him. Unfortunately, because we have this freedom (to accept or reject Him), most people are going to choose to remain their own gods. The Bible tells us that the majority of the world's population is going to reject God and spend eternity in hell.

For wide is the gate and broad is the road that leads to destruction, and many enter through it. But small is the gate and narrow the road that leads to life, and only a few find it. Matthew 7:13,14

So this is life and these are the options: We can accept God--His authority and forgiveness--or we can reject Him. We can have a position of royalty (as children of the King), the peace of eternal security, the purpose of serving the Creator, and the power to make our lives successful or we can foolishly try to create our own reality within His universe. We can choose the love of God with the eternal pleasures of heaven or the loss of God with the eternal pain of hell.

Then they will go away to eternal punishment, but the righteous to eternal life. Matthew 25:46

And the smoke of their torment rises for ever and ever. Revelation 14:11

So please, I urge you, if you have not accepted Jesus as your Lord and Savior, if you have not accepted the reason for your existence--your position as a child of the living God--do it now! You don't have to go anywhere, you don't have to be with anybody, and you don't have to be good enough

to do it. Remember, nobody is good enough! We don't become righteous to be accepted by God, we accept God to become righteous.

This righteousness from God comes through faith in Jesus Christ to all who believe. There is no difference, for all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God, and are justified freely by his grace through the redemption that came by Christ Jesus. Romans 3:22,23

"It is not the healthy who need a doctor, but the sick." . . . "For I have not come to call the righteous, but sinners." Matthew 9:12,13

I have included--if you feel you need it--a precise prayer to pray to take this oh-so-wonderful step. It is in the chapter titled "So What Should You Do?" (You can, of course, say it in your own words.) So do it: Accept the Lord! Receive Him as the Father He wants to be, with the love He has to give, the forgiveness He died to provide, and the plan He has for your life. Become what you were created to be! And let me tell you, from the voice of experience, it is beyond wonderful!!!

Chapter A-4

WHO & WHAT IS SATAN?

A. WHO & WHAT IS SATAN?

Up to this point, the scope of this book has been limited to God, the human race, and the relationship that God is seeking with each one of us. A thorough discussion on life, however, requires another very important aspect--“our enemy.” **Satan is very real!** When God created life, He did not limit it to the physical world--to the things which we can see and touch. In addition to plants, animals, and people, He also created an extremely large number of angels (spiritual beings who do not have physical bodies) to offer Him praise and worship and to assist Him in running His kingdom. Everything was created for the purpose of serving and honoring God.

Then I looked and heard the voice of many angels, numbering thousands upon thousands, and ten thousand times ten thousand. They encircled the throne and the living creatures and the elders. In a loud voice they sang: “Worthy is the Lamb, who was slain, to receive power and wealth and wisdom and strength and honor and glory and praise!” Revelation 5:11,12

Satan was one of the most beautiful, glorious, and highly exalted of all these angels. God described him as being “the model of perfection, full of wisdom and perfect in beauty,” and gave him a very exalted position as “guardian Cherub.” (A Cherub is a class of angel, and it is not a baby. The only “baby angels” are the porcelain ones which you see at Christmas.)

You were the model of perfection, full of wisdom and perfect in beauty. You were anointed as a guardian cherub, for so I ordained you. Ezekiel 28:12,14

“Guardian,” however, wasn’t good enough for Satan. He, becoming as prideful as he was beautiful, decided that he should be “number one”; he should be the one to be worshiped. He actually tried to exalt himself above God (to take over the authority of the universe).

How you have fallen from heaven, O morning star, son of the dawn! You have been cast down to earth, you who once laid low the nations! You said in your heart, “I will ascend to heaven; I will raise my throne above the stars of God; I will sit enthroned on the mount of assembly, on the utmost heights of the sacred mountain. I will ascend above the tops of the clouds; I will make myself like the Most High.” Isaiah 14:12-14

Angels also have free-will and, yes, this was an absolutely foolish and impossible dream. Satan didn’t try this mutiny on his own, however; he started a rebellion. He convinced one-third of all the angels to revolt with him. (Two-thirds are still serving our all-powerful Creator.)

His tail swept a third of the stars out of the sky and flung them to the earth. Revelation 12:4

The seven stars are the angels of the seven churches, and the seven lampstands are the seven churches. Revelation 1:20

They did, of course, lose the battle and were thrown out of heaven and, I'm sorry to say, down to earth.

And there was war in heaven. Michael and his angels fought against the dragon, and the dragon and his angels fought back. But he was not strong enough, and they lost their place in heaven. The great dragon was hurled down—that ancient serpent called the devil, or Satan, who leads the whole world astray. He was hurled to the earth, and his angels with him. Revelation 12:7-9

As a result of all of this, Satan and the rest of the angels who rebelled with him--who are referred to in the Bible as “demons”--have become the bitter enemies of God, and they fight Him at every possible point. Satan is also the enemy of man (the human race) and, though wanting our worship,

Again, the devil took him to a very high mountain and showed him all the kingdoms of the world and their splendor. “All this I will give you,” he said, “if you will bow down and worship me.” Matthew 4:8,9

ultimately seeks our destruction. Satan and his cohorts know they're going to hell, and they want to take us with them.

Be self-controlled and alert. Your enemy the devil prowls around like a roaring lion looking for someone to devour. 1 Peter 5:8

Because we have this enemy, it is very important that we learn what we can about him (and them). The less we know about an enemy, the more dangerous it is. In seeking to accomplish this goal, we need to become aware of three things: his objectives, his tactics, and his targets.

B. SATAN'S OBJECTIVES

Satan's objectives come from his desire to be worshiped. He wants to rule the human race--to be lord of this earthly kingdom. God, though (being supreme ruler), limits what Satan is allowed to do and will someday (when the time is right) end his reign and banish him to eternal punishment in hell.

Then he will say to those on his left, ‘Depart from me, you who are cursed, into the eternal fire prepared for the devil and his angels.’ Matthew 25:41

Satan doesn't rule hell; he is going to suffer there like anyone who rejects the authority of God. Until that time, though, he does have a great amount of freedom, and he does have authority over everyone who chooses to reject God.

We know that we are children of God, and that the whole world is under the control of the evil one. 1 John 5:19

Thus, as we would expect, Satan's major objective is to keep us from accepting Jesus. Our salvation is a defection from and a defeat to his kingdom. If we do accept Jesus, Satan tries to keep us from serving Him. He does everything he can to stop the spread of God's word (the Bible), and God's work (leading other people to salvation).

The god of this age has blinded the minds of unbelievers, so that they cannot see the light of the gospel of the glory of Christ, who is the image of God. 2 Corinthians 4:4

For we wanted to come to you—certainly I, Paul, did, again and again—but Satan stopped us. 1 Thessalonians 2:18

Also, because of his defeat--which was accomplished by Jesus' death on the cross--

And having disarmed the powers and authorities, he made a public spectacle of them, triumphing over

them by the cross. Colossians 2:15

and his unavoidable future in hell, he is vengefully and hatefully trying to destroy everything of God's that he can (that's us) before his demise.

Before discussing the tactics that Satan and his accomplices use in trying to achieve these goals, let me first assure you that if you are a knowledgeable and obedient Christian--you have accepted Jesus and you know and obey His Word (the Bible)--you have absolutely nothing to fear. Satan would love to have you believe otherwise. Between the presence of the Holy Spirit,

And I will ask the Father, and he will give you another Counselor to be with you forever— the Spirit of truth. John 14:16-17

Do you not know that your body is a temple of the Holy Spirit, who is in you, whom you have received from God? 1 Corinthians 6:19

You, dear children, are from God and have overcome them, because the one who is in you is greater than the one who is in the world. 1 John 4:4

the spiritual weapons and armor which we have available,

For though we live in the world, we do not wage war as the world does. The weapons we fight with are not the weapons of the world. On the contrary, they have divine power to demolish strongholds. 2 Corinthians 10:3,4

Finally, be strong in the Lord and in his mighty power. Put on the full armor of God so that you can take your stand against the devil's schemes. . . . Stand firm then, with the belt of truth buckled around your waist, with the breastplate of righteousness in place, and with your feet fitted with the readiness that comes from the gospel of peace. In addition to all this, take up the shield of faith, with which you can extinguish all the flaming arrows of the evil one. Take the helmet of salvation and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God. And pray in the Spirit on all occasions with all kinds of prayers and requests. With this in mind, be alert and always keep on praying for all the saints. Ephesians 6:10-11,14-18

the authority we have "in Jesus' name,"

However, do not rejoice that the spirits submit to you, but rejoice that your names are written in heaven. Luke 10:20

And these signs will accompany those who believe: In my name they will drive out demons; . . . Mark 16:17

and the things He is willing to do in response to our prayers,

And I will do whatever you ask in my name, so that the Son may bring glory to the Father. You may ask me for anything in my name, and I will do it. John 14:13

we are not only able to withstand the enemy,

Submit yourselves, then, to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you. James 4:7

we should be the aggressors in this war. We should be the ones doing most of the attacking--by leading people out of Satan's kingdom and into God's.

He said to them, "Go into all the world and preach the good news to all creation. Whoever believes and is baptized will be saved, but whoever does not believe will be condemned." Mark 16:15,16

[If all you know about demons is what you have learned from the secular media, then all you know is what the enemy would love for you to believe.]

C. SATAN'S TACTICS

The tactics which our enemies use (the attacks) can be classified in two ways. They may be hidden or revealed (dependent upon whether or not they want their target to know they are under attack) and may be physical or spiritual (dependent upon whether the attack is against a person's body or his spirit). All attacks are ultimately spiritual, as the objective is to either keep us from trusting God or to keep us from serving Him, both of which are more easily accomplished if we are suffering physically.

1. Revealed/Physical Attack

In a revealed/physical attack, the enemy will adversely affect a person's physical body, not caring that the person whom they are attacking nor anyone else who happens to be watching, knows that they are doing it. This is by far the rarest form of attack, as demons have much to lose when people know they are around.

A man in the crowd answered, "Teacher, I brought you my son, who is possessed by a spirit that has robbed him of speech. Whenever it seizes him, it throws him to the ground. He foams at the mouth, gnashes his teeth and becomes rigid. . . . When the spirit saw Jesus, it immediately threw the boy into a convulsion. He fell to the ground and rolled around, foaming at the mouth. . . .It has often thrown him into fire or water to kill him. Mark 9:17,18,20,22

When Jesus got out of the boat, a man with an evil spirit came from the tombs to meet Him. This man lived in the tombs, and no one could bind him any more, not even with a chain. For he had often been chained hand and foot, but he tore the chains apart and broke the irons on his feet. . . .Night and day among the tombs and in the hills he would cry out and cut himself with stones. Mark 5:2-5

It is important to understand that while it is possible for Christians to be **severely** oppressed by demons, possibly even needing outside help to get rid of them, it is impossible for us to be "possessed." Possession implies ownership and Christians are owned by God!

You are worthy to take the scroll and to open its seals, because you were slain, and with your blood you purchased men for God from every tribe and language and people and nation. Revelation 5:9

It is, though, only Christians who should have demons "kicked" out of their bodies.

And these signs will accompany those who believe: In my name they will drive out demons; . . . Mark 16:17

Anyone else who has this type of problem needs to be led to Jesus either before or during the "kicking." The Bible says that if a man has demons forced out of his body but does not have God in it,

Do you not know that your body is a temple of the Holy Spirit, who is in you, whom you have received from God? 1 Corinthians 6:19

he will ultimately be worse off than he was. The demon is coming back with reinforcements.

When an evil spirit comes out of a man, it goes through arid places seeking rest and does not find it. Then it says, 'I will return to the house I left.' When it arrives, it finds the house unoccupied, swept clean and put in order. Then it goes and takes with it seven other spirits more wicked than itself, and they go in and

live there. And the final condition of that man is worse than the first. Matthew 12:43-45

2. Hidden/Physical Attack

In a hidden/physical attack, a demon will adversely affect a person's body (causing illness or other physical problems) while trying not to be detected.

. . . and a woman was there who had been crippled by a spirit for eighteen years. She was bent over and could not straighten up at all. Luke 13:11

Jesus was driving out a demon that was mute. When the demon left, the man who had been mute spoke, and the crowd was amazed. Luke 11:14

So Satan went out from the presence of the LORD and afflicted Job with painful sores from the soles of his feet to the top of his head. Job 2:7

3. Revealed/Spiritual Attack

In a revealed/spiritual attack, a demon will openly attack a person's thoughts and/or emotions, not caring that the person knows he is under attack. The objective is usually (1) to harass the person--to keep him from having peace in his life, or (2) to cause him to react in some way as guided by fear. Fear is not only a twisted way for a demon to cause someone to submit to him (like a bully ruling through intimidation), it is also a way to get a person to distrust and, thus, displease God.

And without faith it is impossible to please God, because anyone who comes to him must believe that he exists and that he rewards those who earnestly seek him. Hebrews 11:6

Demons may also have some form of deception in mind, wherein they try to mislead a person as to the actual objective of the attack. In my personal experience, there have been two particular attempts at deception which are worthy of mention (which God warned me about). At one time, they were harassing me and then retreating easily in order to cause me to grow prideful. On another occasion, they were giving me some extremely weird dreams and visions, anticipating that I would tell other people about them.

When I think my bed will comfort me and my couch will ease my complaint, even then you frighten me with dreams and terrify me with visions, . . . Job thought God was doing this to him.] Job 7:13,14

If I had, the people whom I told would be less likely to listen to or take seriously anything else I had to say. I would then be less able to tell them about God or Satan.

Put on the full armor of God so that you can take your stand against the devil's schemes. Ephesians 6:11

This form of attack--the revealed/spiritual attack--is also somewhat rare, as demons are not going to use it against anyone who is still ignorant of their presence, nor are they going to use it if they think they can accomplish more of their objective by remaining hidden.

4. Hidden/Spiritual Attack

The fourth type of attack--the hidden/spiritual attack--is by far the enemy's most often used, effective, and dangerous technique. It is by using this strategy that Satan controls humanity.

*We know that we are children of God, and that the whole world is under the control of the evil one.
1 John 5:19*

In this attack, the enemy seeks to communicate certain ideas and/or feelings with the primary objective of controlling a person's thoughts, beliefs, and emotions without their target recognizing it as an attack.

Satan rose up against Israel and incited David to take a census of Israel. . . . But Joab replied, "May the LORD multiply his troops a hundred times over. My lord the king, are they not all my lord's subjects? Why does my lord want to do this? Why should he bring guilt on Israel?" 1 Chronicles 21:1,3

If they are successful, if they can sufficiently control what a person thinks, feels, and believes, they can in turn control their behavior and decisions.

Then Peter said, "Ananias, how is it that Satan has so filled your heart that you have lied to the Holy Spirit and have kept for yourself some of the money you received for the land?" Acts 5:3

This is what they did through Adolph Hitler in Germany. The German people were told: There was no God, humans were the result of chance natural processes, and they (the Aryan/Nordic/German type) were the most highly evolved and superior race on earth. As a result, a great number of them--including judges, heads of hospitals, and heads of scientific institutions--not only accepted, but actually contributed in various ways to the murder of over 11 million citizens (Jewish and many others). This extermination of people whom they had been taught were "inferior," was not only viewed as acceptable by the parties involved, it was considered a positive evolutionary step. [See second half of book - source # 15A]

These hidden/spiritual attacks may be indirect--being communicated through some other person, who may or may not know they have been used,

The Spirit clearly says that in later times some will abandon the faith and follow deceiving spirits and things taught by demons. Such teachings come through hypocritical liars, whose consciences have been seared as with a hot iron. 1 Timothy 4:1,2

or direct--being communicated directly by a demon to their target.

4-a. Indirect Channel (Hidden/Spiritual Attack)

An indirect channel (a person whom our enemy would use to try to mislead us) can be anyone. It may be someone quite conspicuous--such as an atheist teacher, the leader of a cult or false religion, an occultist, fortune teller, etc.

Once when we were going to the place of prayer, we were met by a slave girl who had a spirit by which she predicted the future. She earned a great deal of money for her owners by fortune-telling. . . Finally Paul became so troubled that he turned around and said to the spirit, "In the name of Jesus Christ I command you to come out of her!" At that moment the spirit left her. Acts 16:16,18

It may be someone quite inconspicuous--such as a liberal preacher, or the author of a book, song, movie script, or even a law. How many times a day does the media pump out Satan's lie that sin is acceptable, rewarding, justifiable, and inconsequential;

Lust

But I tell you that anyone who looks at a woman lustfully has already committed adultery with her in his heart. Matthew 5:28

Adultery

If a man commits adultery with another man's wife—with the wife of his neighbor—both the adulterer and the adulteress must be put to death. Leviticus 20:10

Disobedience

Children, obey your parents in the Lord, for this is right. "Honor your father and mother"—which is the first commandment with a promise—"that it may go well with you and that you may enjoy long life on earth." Ephesians 6:1-3

Everyone must submit himself to the governing authorities, for there is no authority except that which God has established. Romans 13.1

Idolatry, theft, greed, adultery, drunkenness, sexual sin.

Do not be deceived: Neither the sexually immoral nor idolaters nor adulterers nor male prostitutes nor homo-sexual offenders nor thieves nor the greedy nor drunkards nor slanderers nor swindlers will inherit the kingdom of God. And that is what some of you were. But you were washed, you were sanctified, you were justified in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ and by the Spirit of our God. 1 Corinthians 6:9,11

Vengeance

Forgive us our sins, for we also forgive everyone who sins against us. Luke 11:4

and how many laws have been passed which lend legitimacy and often even financial support to sin and/or sinful lifestyles (lifestyles that are going to send people to hell)?

No fault divorce

"Haven't you read," he replied, "that at the beginning the Creator 'made them male and female,' and said, 'For this reason a man will leave his father and mother and be united to his wife, and the two will become one flesh'? So they are no longer two, but one. Therefore what God has joined together, let not man separate." Matthew 19:4-6

Condom distribution in schools

If, however, the charge is true and no proof of the girl's virginity can be found, she shall be brought to the door of her father's house and there the men of her town shall stone her to death. Deuteronomy 22:20,21

Abortion

If men who are fighting hit a pregnant woman and she gives birth prematurely but there is no serious injury, the offender must be fined whatever the woman's husband demands and the court allows. But if there is serious injury, you are to take life for life, . . . Exodus 21:22,23

(Question - Would God have called a mass of tissue "life," and would He have commanded the death penalty for ending it?)

Surely I was sinful at birth, sinful from the time my mother conceived me. Psalm 51:5

(Question - Can a mass of tissue have a sinful nature?)

When Elizabeth heard Mary's greeting, the baby leaped in her womb, and Elizabeth was filled with the Holy Spirit. . . . "As soon as the sound of your greeting reached my ears, the baby in my womb leaped for joy." Luke 1:41,44 (Question: Can a mass of tissue leap for joy?)

(Question: If the virgin Mary would have had an abortion, what would have been removed?)

(Question: Why is it legal to get an abortion, while it is illegal to break the egg of an endangered species bird?)

For 'scientific' proof that abortion is murder, see the chart on page 137.

Gambling

Keep your lives free from the love of money and be content with what you have, . . . Hebrews 13:5

But godliness with contentment is great gain. For we brought nothing into the world, and we can take nothing out of it. But if we have food and clothing, we will be content with that. People who want to get rich fall into temptation and a trap and into many foolish and harmful desires that plunge men into ruin and destruction. For the love of money is a root of all kinds of evil. 1 Timothy 6:6-10

The LORD sends poverty and wealth; he humbles and he exalts. 1 Samuel 2:7

Put to death, therefore, whatever belongs to your earthly nature: sexual immorality, impurity, lust, evil desires and greed, which is idolatry. Colossians 3:5

Welfare to sound minded and able bodied people

For even when we were with you, we gave you this rule: "If a man will not work, he shall not eat." 2 Thessalonians 3:10

An indirect channel may also be an unsuspecting friend or loved one, who, thinking he is giving us good advice, is actually being used to try to lead us out of the will of God.

Peter took him aside and began to rebuke him. "Never, Lord!" he said. "This shall never happen to you!" Jesus turned and said to Peter, "Get behind me, Satan! You are a stumbling block to me; you do not have in mind the things of God, but the things of men." Matthew 16.22:23

4-b. Direct Attacks (Hidden/Spiritual Attack)

Direct attacks upon us or upon the indirect channels used to try to mislead us may also come in a number of forms. A demon may come boldly, but deceitfully, presenting itself as some kind of helpful entity (a good angel,

And no wonder, for Satan himself masquerades as an angel of light. 2 Corinthians 11:14

a spirit guide, the ghost of a departed loved one, or of a departed Saint,

Let no one be found among you who . . . consults the dead. Anyone who does these things is detestable to the LORD, and because of these detestable practices the LORD your God will drive out those nations before you. Deuteronomy 18:10-12

a psychic pet, an alien from another planet, etc.), or as some kind of evil entity in order to promote fear. They also quite often deceive people by providing a supposedly impersonal source of information,

Once when we were going to the place of prayer, we were met by a slave girl who had a spirit by which she predicted the future. She earned a great deal of money for her owners by fortune-telling. Acts 16:16

or a supply of energy, which is just unexplainably available for their use (ki, chi, prana, the force, crystal or pyramid power, telekinesis, telepathy, psychic knowledge, psychic power, ESP, witchcraft, Ouija boards, divining rods/water witching, etc.).

Let no one be found among you who sacrifices his son or daughter in the fire, who practices divination or sorcery, interprets omens, engages in witchcraft, or casts spells, or who is a medium or spiritist or who consults the dead. Anyone who does these things is detestable to the LORD, and because of these detestable practices the LORD your God will drive out those nations before you. Deuteronomy 18:10-12

Now I say to the rest of you in Thyatira, to you who do not hold to her teaching and have not learned Satan's so-called deep secrets . . . Revelation 2:24

If demons can convince people that they possess or can obtain supernatural knowledge and power, those people will be much less likely ever to humble themselves before God.

But the Egyptian magicians did the same things by their secret arts, and Pharaoh's heart became hard: he would not listen to Moses and Aaron, just as the LORD had said. Exodus 7:22

Consider all of the recent movies, books, video games, magazines, etc. which are preparing people to fall for these deceptions, and how many of them are aimed at children.

Put on the full armor of God so that you can take your stand against the devil's schemes. Ephesians 6:11

Demons may also have the ability to manifest themselves in physical form (to further their deception). God's holy angels have this ability, and there is nothing in the Bible which indicates that the rebellious ones do not.

Do not forget to entertain strangers, for by so doing some people have entertained angels without knowing it. Hebrews 13:2

For the people who are unwilling to accept or unlikely to fall for any of this "supernatural" deception (messages from trans-world beings or mystical flows of energy and knowledge), these direct hidden/spiritual attacks are disguised in a different way. They are designed so that the people receiving them will believe that they came from themselves--that the thoughts and/or feelings are simply some of their own. (When the "voices heard" become too clear, they are sometimes referred to as the "inner-self" or the "higher consciousness.")

Satan rose up against Israel and incited David to take a census of Israel. - - - But Joab replied, "May the LORD multiply his troops a hundred times over. My lord the king, are they not all my lord's subjects? Why does my lord want to do this? Why should he bring guilt on Israel? 1 Chronicles 21:1,3

Peter took him aside and began to rebuke him. "Never, Lord!" he said. "This shall never happen to you!" Jesus turned and said to Peter, "Get behind me, Satan! You are a stumbling block to me; you do not have in mind the things of God, but the things of men." Matthew 16.22:23

These attacks may come in the form of projected thoughts and visions or as attacks against the nervous system.

A projected thought is a thought (a word, phrase, or sentence) which is subliminally projected into a person's mind. (This is the strategy behind subliminal advertising.) It can be a thought about anything, such as: "That is so desirable"; "I deserve better."; "Nobody will know."; "Everybody does it."; "I can't stop now"; "Why did I do that?"; "I'm such a sleaze."; "God could never forgive me."; or "I would be better off dead."

On October 31, 1996, shortly after waking up, I became very sick--very quickly. I felt too sick to stand up, but too nauseated to lie down. While struggling to make it over to a trash can (for previous implied reason), the thought hit me — "e-coli." This thought was easily recognized as an attack by the enemy,

because at that time, I had no knowledge of this disease other than its' name. Nor did I know that it was something which occurred in this country. It was not, therefore, a thought that would have come from me. The enemy was ignorant of my lack of knowledge regarding this subject and, thus, believed that he could scare me with this thought. (My immediate thought was, "yeah, right!") What did deceive me was that the enemy was also responsible for my symptoms of illness. After I prayed, and God got rid of my un-welcomed guest, I immediately began to feel better.

In the mid 1990s, part of the facilities of a church that I know of were destroyed by an arsonist. At the same time the fires were being set, the pastor's wife--who was at a different location and had no knowledge of what was happening--was having thoughts which she described as being "totally out of character for her." The thoughts questioned God's presence, His involvement in our lives, and His concern for our well being.

A projected vision is the same thing as a projected thought, except that it comes in picture form. Demons also understand that a picture is worth a thousand words. They may project a single picture, at any time, to cause someone to think about a particular subject, or they may create an entire short story, which they project at specific times. These stories are normally projected while people are sleeping, as visions can easily be passed off as a person's dreams. They are probably also used quite often while people are in altered states of consciousness (because of mind-altering drugs, transcendental meditation, hypnotization, etc.).

When I think my bed will comfort me and my couch will ease my complaint, even then you frighten me with dreams and terrify me with visions, . . . Job 7:13,14

Input thoughts and visions can be used in several ways. They may be used to tempt us into sinning or distrusting God; to distract us when we are listening to a sermon, reading the Bible, or trying to pray; to cause us to remember when we need to forgive and forget; or to deceive us in a number of ways.

Put on the full armor of God so that you can take your stand against the devil's schemes. Ephesians 6:11

In regard to this last purpose, "attempted deception," there are three specific strategies which demons use, worthy of mention. (1) They give people thoughts and visions of things which are not true to get them to believe some lie (past life experiences, false memories of abuse, UFO encounters, out-of-body, and near-death experiences). (2) They give people thoughts and visions of things which are true to get them to trust in psychics and psychic power instead of God. (They supply information which enables a psychic to solve a crime or to tell someone about the past, things which the demons observed as they happened.) (3) They supposedly enable someone to foretell the future, giving someone the idea that something is going to occur (a premonition), then try to make it happen. (They tell someone, "An old friend is going to call," then go implant the idea of calling in the minds of all their old friends.)

Once when we were going to the place of prayer, we were met by a slave girl who had a spirit by which she predicted the future. She earned a great deal of money for her owners by fortune-telling. Acts 16:16

If a prophet, or one who foretells by dreams, appears among you and announces to you a miraculous sign or wonder, and if the sign or wonder of which he has spoken takes place, and he says, "Let us follow other gods" (gods you have not known) "and let us worship them," you must not listen to the words of that prophet or dreamer. The LORD your God is testing you to find out whether you love Him with all your heart and with all your soul. Deuteronomy 13:1-3

In an attack against a person's nervous system, a demon is somehow able to affect

emotions--causing nervousness, fear, depression, or anger--with no identifiable physical or mental basis. In my own experience (when God has allowed the enemy to test my faith), one of their attacks has been to send a strong physiological “chill/fear” into my body. Most often, it has felt like a focused, cold wind which entered my body and then spread out from the point of contact. On two occasions it felt like getting hit with a full bucket of “cold chill.” On one other occasion, the attack lacked the sensation of cold, but it affected my entire body, as if being exposed to a large amount of static electricity. It felt similar to the effect produced when pulling certain fabrics out of a clothes dryer, except that it was on the inside of my body. (I would be quite surprised if this did not accurately describe at least some of the panic attacks which people suffer.) My wife, at one time, experienced an instant release from feelings of anger the moment I commanded demons out of our house “in Jesus’ name.”

“In your anger, do not sin”: Do not let the sun go down while you are still angry, and do not give the devil a foothold. Ephesians 4:26,27

It has also been reported that demons can cause feelings of exhilaration and comfort, using these “feelings” to encourage people to continue on the path to destruction: those caught up in various cults and occultic practices. [33]

It’s important to understand that even though demons are able to initiate thoughts, and are able to affect emotional responses unrelated to any biological or external reality in our lives, one of their most often used strategies is to encourage problems which already exist.

D. SATAN'S TARGETS

The targets that Satan will attack are probably as unlimited as the strategies that he will use against them. For the sake of time and space, this discussion is going to be limited to four: God’s character, the Bible, the Church, and our families. The Bible, the Church, and our families are God’s three major tools for bringing people to salvation.

1. GOD’S CHARACTER

In his attack on God’s character, Satan’s goal is to get us to blame God for all the trouble in the world. Whether our problems are the result of sin (ours or someone else’s) or are caused directly by one of his demons, Satan tries to get us to blame God “for letting it happen.” He tells us that, “Since this horrible thing has happened, it can only mean one of three things: either God didn't know about it, He couldn't stop it, or worst of all, He doesn't care.”

Great is our Lord and mighty in power; his understanding has no limit. Psalm 147:5

But God demonstrates his own love for us in this: While we were still sinners, Christ died for us. Romans 5:8

These are, of course, lies. In the next chapter you are going to see why God does allow evil to exist. It is also important to remember that God’s perspective is omniscient and eternal, and it is very much different from our own. Some of the things we may perceive as bad are actually good. For instance,

He sometimes allows good people to die to spare them from evil,

The righteous perish, and no one ponders it in his heart; devout men are taken away, and no one understands that the righteous are taken away to be spared from evil. Isaiah 57:1

or from having to see the judgment which He pours out upon evil.

Because your heart was responsive and you humbled yourself before the LORD when you heard what I have spoken against this place and its people, that they would become accursed and laid waste, and because you tore your robes and wept in my presence, I have heard you, declares the LORD. Therefore I will gather you to your fathers, and you will be buried in peace. Your eyes will not see all the disaster I am going to bring on this place. 2 Kings 22:19,20

2. THE BIBLE

In his attack on the Bible, Satan has two objectives: our ignorance and our disbelief. Our ignorance is accomplished if he is simply able to keep us from reading it. He tries to keep us preoccupied, or he tells us that it's too hard to understand, not relevant, or not important. Our disbelief is accomplished if he is able to get us to doubt either its origin (telling us that it was not inspired by God)

All scripture is God-breathed and is useful for teaching, rebuking, correcting and training in righteousness, . . . 2 Timothy 3:16

or its authenticity (telling us that even if it was the Word of God, it has been changed over the years and is no longer trustworthy).

Every word of God is flawless; he is a shield to those who take refuge in him. Do not add to his words, or he will rebuke you and prove you a liar. Proverbs 30:5,6

I tell you the truth, until heaven and earth disappear, not the smallest letter, not the least stroke of a pen, will by any means disappear from the Law until everything is accomplished. Matthew 5:18

Once he gets us to doubt either of these, he can easily lead us to question its authority (since it isn't God's Word or isn't trustworthy, it has no control over my life), and its power (since it isn't the true Word of God, it can't get me in touch with Him and can't help me.). Another strategy he uses is to attack "truth" itself, telling people that there is no absolute truth. (If the statement "There is no absolute truth!" is not absolute truth, then it's an absolute lie!)

3. THE CHURCH

Before discussing Satan's third target "the church," it's important that we understand exactly what the church is. In the Bible, "church" refers to any and/or all believers in our Lord, Jesus Christ (those who have personally accepted Him as Lord and Savior).

Do not cause anyone to stumble, whether Jews, Greeks or the church of God . . . 1 Corinthians 10:32

It does not refer to a building, and it does not include those individuals who regularly participate in the activities of a church but have not accepted Jesus. (As one preacher put it, "Being in a church building doesn't make someone a Christian any more than being in a garage makes them a car.")

In this attack, since we have already accepted salvation and, thus, have been removed from both his kingdom and authority, Satan's major objective is to keep us from serving God. God wants to use us to bring the unsaved world to salvation and to assist and encourage other believers in living the Christian life. Satan's strategy is to attack the Church from both the inside and the outside at the same time.

3-a. From the Inside

In his interior assault, some of Satan's tactics are as follows:

1. He tries to get us to doubt the Bible, so (a) because of our own uncertainty, we will be unlikely to offer its message to anyone else, and (b) without the personal comfort and security which comes from believing God's promises, we will be less able to comfort or encourage other Christians.
2. He tries to confuse us with false teaching, so (a) we, in turn, help to confuse other people, and (b) we participate in the spreading of false doctrine which, when proven incorrect, casts a shadow of doubt on our whole message.
3. He tries to divide us over unimportant issues, thereby causing us to spend time in inner conflict rather than working together to achieve God's goals.
4. He tries to get us to sin, so (a) we will be seen by ourselves and others as failures and hypocrites and will be as unlikely to tell others about Jesus as they would be to listen, and (b) we will serve as a discouragement to other Christians.

For this reason, when I could stand it no longer, I sent to find out about your faith. I was afraid that in some way the tempter might have tempted you and our efforts might have been useless. 1 Thessalonians 3:5

5. He tries to keep us preoccupied with the temporal things of this life, to keep us from investing our time in the most important, most valuable, and only eternal thing in this world--the people around us.
6. He tries to convince us that evangelism (telling people about God and His offer of salvation) is the preacher's job and that Christianity is not a subject to be discussed at work, school, etc. (It is incredibly selfish and ungodly to associate with non-Christians on a regular basis, know they're on the path to hell and not try to stop them. How in the world can we do this and call ourselves friends?)
7. He tries to keep us from intimate fellowship with God, so we end up trying to convince people of His existence with no personal testimony. (We try exclusively to be His lawyers, when He also commands us to be His witnesses.)

"But you will receive power when the Holy Spirit comes on you; and you will be my witnesses in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and to the ends of the earth." Acts 1:8

3-b. From the Outside

In his exterior assault on the church, Satan's goal is to keep the unsaved world away from serious Christians--those who know, love, and obey the Lord. He doesn't want them associating with people who have a wonderful relationship with God and who understand salvation. His strategy is to

publicly disgrace the church--destroying its credibility and appeal--while at the same time telling the world that Christianity is simply a religion, and one of many to choose from. He attempts to disgrace the church by calling attention to his internal victories (just mentioned), to the sinfulness of non-Christian “church” attendees (who the world perceives as Christians but who do not have the guidance or protection of the Holy Spirit), and to the absurdity and wickedness of his false prophets and teachers (once they have been exposed).

For such men are false apostles, deceitful workmen, masquerading as apostles of Christ. And no wonder, for Satan himself masquerades as an angel of light. 2 Corinthians 11:13,14

He also tells the world that Christians are narrow-minded (because the Bible teaches that the Creator of heaven and earth is the only way to get to heaven from earth)

In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was with God in the beginning. Through him all things were made; without him nothing was made that has been made. . . . The Word became flesh and made his dwelling among us. John 1:1-3,14

Jesus answered, “I am the way and the truth and the life. No one comes to the Father except through me.” John 14:6

and intolerant (because we tell people of “other faiths” and “other lifestyles” this truth).

Do not suppose that I have come to bring peace to the earth. I did not come to bring peace, but a sword. Matthew 10:34

He also tells them that we are against knowledge and education (even though literacy levels always increase when the Bible is introduced into a society), quite strange (as increasingly portrayed by the secular media), weak (confusing weakness with meekness), and opposed to having fun.

Don't believe it! Christianity is not some price we pay to get to heaven. It is an extremely wonderful walk with God on our way to eternal bliss. It is the comfort of having the unconditional love and acceptance of Almighty God and of knowing that we are His children and He is our Father. It is knowing that He will never leave us nor forsake us, and that He is making everything in our lives work together for our benefit. It is having free and instantaneous access to Him--at any time--to ask for the things we need, and the desires of our hearts. It is the ability to receive guidance for every decision in life from the all-knowing, all-seeing, and all-powerful Creator of the universe. It is peace through the storms of life, and the security of knowing that death will be the most wonderful thing that ever happens to us.

How great is the love the Father has lavished on us, that we should be called children of God! 1 John 3:1

. . . God has said, “Never will I leave you; never will I forsake you.” Hebrews 13:5

And we know that in all things God works for the good of those who love him, who have been called according to his purpose. Romans 8:28

Let us then approach the throne of grace with confidence, so that we may receive mercy and find grace to help us in our time of need. Hebrews 4:16

You guide me with your counsel, and afterward you will take me into glory. Psalm 73:24

And the peace of God, which transcend all understanding, will guard your hearts and your minds in Christ Jesus. Philippians 4:7

For to me, to live is Christ and to die is gain. Philippians 1:21

4. Our Families

The battle Satan is waging against his fourth target--our families--often seems the most vicious, as his victims don't have to wait until they're burning in hell to suffer. In this attack, he uses an exterior assault--inspiring economic, governmental, and societal pressures--which result in an ever increasing strain on the family. (In the U.S.A. today, a traditional family with a stay-at-home mom is often financially burdened, receives almost no break from the taxing authority, and is looked down upon by many in society.) Satan's most intensive and damaging attacks, however, always come from the inside, as he inspires the family to turn against itself. He uses supposed "loved ones"--family member against family member--to destroy each other in a way that no outsider ever could. Through this attack, we can more clearly see how totally evil Satan is.

In order to understand this attack, we first need to understand God's purpose for the family. Why did He create it? Why didn't He just have us mate like a bunch of animals and not have so many physical and emotional needs? Why did He bring man and woman together in marriage and command that it be for life?

"Haven't you read," he replied, "that at the beginning the Creator 'made them male and female,' and said, 'For this reason a man will leave his father and mother and be united to his wife, and the two will become one flesh'? So they are no longer two, but one. Therefore what God has joined together, let not man separate." Matthew 19:4-6

Why do we come into this world needing our parents' guidance, protection, and provision for so many years? Why do we need their love and acceptance? Why do we need to feel that we are important to them?

To answer these questions, we must first remember that God is family. Even though He is one God, He exists as Father, Son, and Holy Spirit. We must also remember that being saved means being brought into this family--being accepted as an eternal child of God.

Yet to all who received him, to those who believed in his name, he gave the right to become children of God . . . John 1:12

Thus, since it is God's desire to make us His eternal family, He has given us our temporary families to teach us about as well as help lead us into this everlasting one. As children, we learn to love, trust, respect, and obey an earthly father and mother; and we will simply be repeating the process as we learn to love, trust, respect, and obey Him--our Heavenly Father. As parents--experiencing love for our own children--we are more able to understand the incredible love He has for us--unprompted, unearned, and undeserved.

We love because He first loved us. 1 John 4:19

Our families are a model and a bridge. What we receive initially from our parents and our relationship with them are ultimately to be transferred to God. We find our identity and our significance in being their children, we freely put our faith in them to care for and protect us, and we receive their unconditional love, acceptance, and provision. (The Bible also compares the love between Jesus and His Church to the love between a husband and wife--Jesus being the Bridegroom and the church being His bride.)

Husbands, love your wives, just as Christ loved the church and gave himself up for her to make her holy,

cleansing her by the washing with water through the word, and to present her to himself as a radiant church, without stain or wrinkle or any other blemish, but holy and blameless. In this same way, husbands ought to love their wives as their own bodies. He who loves his wife loves himself. After all, no one ever hated his own body, but he feeds and cares for it, just as Christ does the church—for we are members of his body. Ephesians 5:25-30

This is at least the way it's supposed to work. Unfortunately, we don't have to look very far to see that people are not living according to God's plan. Satan is amassing terrible victories, and for many, the God-ordained "husband and wife, until-death-do-we-part" family doesn't even exist. Sadly, the children--the most innocent of the victims--are the ones who are suffering the most.

This brings up something incredibly important, something which we desperately need to be aware of: **The devastation of our children is not an unintentional by-product of this attack.** It may even be the number-one reason for this whole assault. It's important to understand that the greatest majority of people who come to the Lord, do so as children. (Children trust much more readily than adults.) It is only natural, therefore, to expect a major offensive from Satan in this area.

So, his objectives in this attack are (a) to destroy family love and unity and any representation of a perfect relationship with God

Love is patient, love is kind. It does not envy, it does not boast, it is not proud. It is not rude, it is not self-seeking, it is not easily angered, it keeps no record of wrongs. Love does not delight in evil but rejoices with the truth. It always protects, always trusts, always hopes, always perseveres! Love never fails. 1 Corinthians 13:4-8.

and (b) to destroy our ability, as well as our desire, to love, trust, respect, and obey the people in authority over us. The first and foremost target is the husband and father because of the mental association linking him (the male in authority) with God--our Heavenly Father. Once again, Satan's ultimate goal is to keep people from entering into this father-and-child relationship with God.

In pursuit of this objective, here are a few of the intermediate goals Satan seeks to accomplish. He attempts to reverse the role of family as a place of refuge by bringing evil into its midst--through mental, physical and sexual abuse, perpetrated by those who are supposed to be the lovers, the protectors, and the leaders.

Husbands, love your wives and do not be harsh with them. Children, obey your parents in everything, for this pleases the Lord. Fathers, do not embitter your children, or they will become discouraged. Colossians 3:19-21

He seeks to remove any basis of security (for protection or provision) by inspiring the family to break apart--through divorce, abandonment, or inspiring children to run away from home.

If anyone does not provide for his relatives, and especially for his immediate family, he has denied the faith and is worse than an unbeliever. 1 Timothy 5:8

He seeks to destroy any sense of identity by destroying family lines--through divorce and often re-marriage.

'For this reason a man will leave his father and mother and be united to his wife, and the two will become one flesh'? So they are no longer two, but one. Therefore what God has joined together, let not man separate.' Matthew 19:5,6

Anyone who divorces his wife and marries another woman commits adultery against her. Mark 10:11

(If you have been divorced and then married to another person, you are not to go back to your original spouse.)

*If a man divorces his wife and she leaves him and marries another man, should he return to her again?
Would not the land be completely defiled? Jeremiah 3:1*

Finally, Satan seeks to destroy any feelings of significance or self worth by leading the family into abuse, division, or neglect (leading people to make careers, outside activities, or the pursuit of material possessions a higher priority than spending time with their “loved ones”),

Fathers, do not exasperate your children; instead, bring them up in the training and instruction of the Lord. Ephesians 6:4

Fix these words of mine in your hearts and minds; . . . Teach them to your children, talking about them when you sit at home and when you walk along the road, when you lie down and when you get up. Deuteronomy 11:18,19

then telling the victims that any problems they have are their own fault.

If Satan is successful, if he is able to achieve these goals, he is then able to send his victims out damaged and hurting into the world, less able to function and with no foundation upon which to stand. His victims aren't sure who they are, why they are here, or where they are going, and they don't know where to find the physical and emotional security they so desperately need. (They could always turn to God, but with the experience they have had with their earthly father, it is unlikely that they will want to jump into a relationship with a Heavenly Father.) So, they go out into the world looking for answers and trying to get their needs met. Unfortunately, when they arrive, they find Satan is there too — waiting.

One occultic book which I have seen says that a high percentage of people who communicate with nature and animals (demons in disguise) share a common history of “unhappy childhoods.”

E. SATAN'S OVERALL STRATEGY

Satan is always around, lurking in the shadows, ever seeking to entice us away from God and toward destruction. As the Bible puts it, “He prowls around like a roaring lion looking for someone to devour.”

Be self-controlled and alert. Your enemy the devil prowls around like a roaring lion looking for someone to devour. 1 Peter 5:8

He is always seeking victims--feeding us lies, trying to keep us from Biblical truth, attacking our ability and desire to call upon God, and often seeking to provide for us himself.

He was a murderer from the beginning, not holding to the truth, for there is no truth in him. When he lies, he speaks his native language, for he is a liar and the father of lies. John 8:44

Yes, Satan wants to provide for us. This is not only another strategy for keeping people away from God, this is how he gets us to serve him. If what we are doing and how we are living furthers his cause, then he is going to do everything he can to keep us on our present path. In keeping with his consistent strategy of lying, however, we always discover one of two things. (1) Any needs he helps us meet are outside the will of God, being accomplished at the wrong time or in the wrong way, and not in our eternal best interest.

Wait for the LORD; be strong and take heart and wait for the LORD. Psalm 27:14

(2) Most often, all he does, is help us satisfy our desires, after convincing us that these desires are

needs. He is incredibly skilled at blurring the difference.

Here also, he is not only very skilled, he is very generous and very dangerous. It's anything we want, any time we want, any way we want. It's kind of like giving a child free reign of the house--the china cabinet, the medicine cabinet, the gun cabinet. Satan offers us "freedom of choice." God offers us freedom after choice. Satan has no rules, no laws to obey. He requires no restraint, no patience, no self-control, and most importantly, he requires no humility. Serving him, the only things we bow down to are our desires. What we fail to realize is how many of our desires and/or the intensity of them are because of him.

Fortunately, if it results in people turning to God (unfortunately, if it doesn't), we don't have to wait for eternity for the lies to show. Satan's offers never work! They never produce the results we desire! He offers us power, but it's always destructive; success and possessions, but never contentment; significance, which must be maintained; and security, until he's through with us, or God decides differently. Satan offers us knowledge, without wisdom; pleasure, but not joy; peace, dependent upon circumstances; and the freedom to decide for ourselves what is right or wrong, but with no control over the consequences.

Do you see what he's doing--do you see his strategy? He's feeding and taking advantage of our sinful nature

Surely I was sinful at birth, sinful from the time my mother conceived me. Psalm 51:5

(of our desire to reject God in favor of being our own authority) while telling us that we can still get everything we need or want, and that everything will turn out fine. He is telling us "we don't need God" by offering us substitutes. He is trying to fill all the voids in our lives which God has put there so we do need Him. This is also where religions come in. They are a supposed substitute for a loving, personal, and worshipful relationship with God. God has put in each one of us the inclination to worship, and even when people reject Him, most of them still formally worship something. Unfortunately, with the foolishness that comes with rejecting God, Satan can make it something as ridiculous and degrading as a another human being,

An "avatar" is a human worshiped in Hinduism who is supposed to be "totally merged with God." [33A Hinduism]

nature (which God told us to rule over),

Then God said, "Let us make man in our image, in our likeness, and let them rule over the fish of the sea and the birds of the air, over the livestock, over all the earth, and over all the creatures that move along the ground." Genesis 1:26

a statue, or even a cow.

He took what they handed him and made it into an idol cast in the shape of a calf, fashioning it with a tool. They then said, "These are your gods . . ." Exodus 32:4

Satan finds great delight in degrading humanity.

National Geographic (March 1985) shows people who practice Voodoo in Haiti immersing themselves in large mud pits, flopping around in it (i.e. like a pig), because of the special powers which are supposedly gained from this ritual.

National Geographic (May 1990) shows people in India (members of a sect of Hinduism called "Nagas") walking around naked, coated with ashes from dung fires, on their way to "ritually bathe" in the Ganges River for "spiritual purification."

The Ganges River receives all the sewage from the city of Banaras (population 800,000) pouring in where this ritual occurs. Hindus from all sects come to drink and bathe in this “holy water.” Hindus believe that the Ganges River is a god; cholera statistics indicate otherwise. [33A Hinduism]

Hinduism has many other practices of utter human degradation: (1) Devotees who suicidally throw themselves in front of huge chariots bearing a deity’s image. (2) Temples built to feed and care for “sacred rats.” (Rats eat 15 % of India’s grain each year). (3) The worship of cobras (which kill an estimated 20,000 Indians each year). (4) The devaluing of females to the point that some mothers murder their newborn girls. (5) 159,000,000 “sacred cows” (20% of the world’s total) running around while people starve. The cow is believed to be the “mother-goddess of life. The urine is sometimes drunk to “purify the soul” and “holy men” known as “Sadhus” (which may be associated with the “Nagas” mentioned above), wander around the country naked with cow dung mashed in their hair. [33A Hinduism]

In regard to eternity, Satan’s “you can be your own god” lie is usually manifested in one of three forms.

For God knows that when you eat of it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil. Genesis 3:5

To some people, Satan says, “You can be your own god now, and this life is all there is. There is no life after death; when you die, you simply cease to exist.”

Then they will go away to eternal punishment, but the righteous to eternal life. Matthew 25:46

To others he says, “Don’t worry about it, everything will turn out fine. All roads ultimately lead to heaven.

Jesus answered, “I am the way and the truth and the life. No one comes to the Father except through me.” John 14:6

Just live a good life!

There is a way that seems right to a man, but in the end it leads to death. Proverbs 14:12

Besides, nobody will really burn forever in hell; it just can’t be!”

The lake of fire is the second death. If anyone’s name was not found written in the book of life, he was thrown into the lake of fire. Revelation 20:14,15

They will be tormented day and night forever and ever. Revelation 20:10

Finally, to others he says, “You can not only be god now, you can be god in some future life too.” Various religions actually teach that people can become the gods of their own planets or are going to just miraculously evolve into god in some abstract metaphysical form, even though no one is exactly sure why or how. (New Age religions teach that “god” is an impersonal force which is in and is a part of all things--including us. They teach that when people die, they continue to be god; they simply change form and are absorbed into the rest of the universe--into the rest of “god.”) Most of the religions that teach reincarnation also fit into these categories, as Satan tells these people that everyone ultimately makes it to the top (heaven). He either tells them that they reincarnate “up” with every new life or have an unlimited number of chances to “get it right.” (I wonder what reincarnationists would say if you asked them--“Who determines when they get it right?”.)

Just as man is destined to die once, and after that to face . . . Hebrews 9:27

F. GOD’S ALTERNATIVE OFFER

Jesus tells us that He is “God Almighty--creator of time, space, matter, heaven, and earth,”

Moses said to God, “Suppose I go to the Israelites and say to them, ‘The God of your fathers has sent me to you,’ and they ask me, ‘What is his name?’ Then what shall I tell them?” God said to Moses, “I AM WHO I AM. This is what you are to say to the Israelites: I AM has sent me to you.” Exodus 3:13,14

“I tell you the truth,” Jesus answered, “before Abraham was born, I am!” John 8:58

In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was with God in the beginning. Through him all things were made; without him nothing was made that has been made. . . . The Word became flesh and made his dwelling among us. John 1:1-3,14

and that in order for us to spend eternity in heaven with Him, rather than burning in hell,

Then they will go away to eternal punishment, but the righteous to eternal life. Matthew 25:46

we must accept Him as Lord and Savior. We must admit that we have sinned,

. . . for all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God, . . . Romans 3:23

ask Him for forgiveness, and humbly and repentantly step down from the throne of our lives, giving that position to Him.

Repent, then, and turn to God, so that your sins may be wiped out, . . . Acts 3:19

Not everyone who says to me, ‘Lord, Lord,’ will enter the kingdom of heaven, but only he who does the will of my Father who is in heaven. Matthew 7:21

No, this is not easy. How could it be? He is asking for our lives! He wants us to give up control, to resign from being our own god--to become His servants. We do not, however, give up our freedom. We gain it!

So if the Son sets you free, you will be free indeed. John 8:36

When we accept Jesus, we are given access to everything that we will ever need for making correct, temporally freeing, and eternally beneficial decisions. We are given access to power from God to break both sin and Satan’s strongholds in our lives,

The weapons we fight with are not the weapons of the world. On the contrary, they have divine power to demolish strongholds. 2 Corinthians 10:4

access to wisdom from God which He offers to all His children who ask,

If any of you lacks wisdom, he should ask God, who gives generously to all without finding fault, and it will be given to him. James 1:5

and access to knowledge from God which will guide us successfully through this life. (Much of the information in the Bible is unavailable without insight and interpretation by the Holy Spirit.)

But the Counselor, the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in my name, will teach you all things and will remind you of everything I have said to you. John 14:26

All scripture is God-breathed, and is useful for teaching, rebuking, correcting and training in righteousness. Timothy 3:16

We go from being controlled by our own sinful desires--which are greatly influenced and controlled by Satan--to gaining the love, guidance, warnings, and power of the Holy Spirit to live righteously.

(If Satan and his cohorts have a specific stronghold in your life, you will learn how to break it in the

chapter entitled, “So What Should You Do?”.)

So, God wants us to accept Him as Lord and Savior and to let Him begin changing us to be like Him--holy and righteous, opposed to sin, loving, patient, kind, gentle, and self controlled. He wants to guide us, to fix us, and to use us in the lives of other people, and He promises that we will be temporally and eternally blessed for allowing Him to do so. It is, however, only if we let Him. God will never force us to obey.

Unfortunately, in spite of the incredible love that God has shown (through Creation, His sacrifice, and all the blessings which He offers) and in spite of the destruction that Satan is causing (the shattered lives, the lack of security, fulfillment, or purpose), most people refuse to give God their lives. They choose to live a totally useless earthly life (having no eternal value), will suffer many things with nothing good ever resulting, and will spend eternity burning in hell rather than humbling themselves before our all powerful and loving God.

For wide is the gate and broad is the road that leads to destruction, and many enter through it. But small is the gate and narrow the road that leads to life, and only a few find it. Matthew 7:13,14

Don't make this mistake yourself. Don't listen to Satan, and don't agree with him that you can be your own god. It won't work! It's fantasy! It was fantasy for him, and it's fantasy for us! Besides, God's plan is better anyway. Even if there were some way for us to exist in His universe without Him (other than in hell), it would be terrible. If there were some way to separate ourselves from the One who gave us the beauty of creation and our eyes to see, the emotion of love and our hearts to enjoy, the purpose of heaven and our souls to yearn--from--the One who offers us life, love, forgiveness, and purpose--it would be terrible.

So do it! Step out of Satan's kingdom and into God's. Step out of the darkness, the deception, the meaningless, sinful, and destructive paths that lead to hell, and step into a wonderful and everlasting relationship with God. Join the kingdom of righteousness, the kingdom of life, light, love, and truth. I assure you, it's the most wonderful thing that you will ever do!

Chapter A-5

WHY DOES GOD ALLOW EVIL?

A. WHY DOES GOD ALLOW EVIL TO EXIST?

The battle Satan is waging against the human race and against the kingdom of God brings us to ask our next major question. Since God is all-knowing, all-seeing, all-powerful, and absolutely hates evil, then why does He allow it? Why does He allow Satan or any evil being--human or angel--to even exist, much less oppose Him?

In answering this question, it is necessary to raise and answer two additional questions closely related to this one. The first stems from the fact that God knows the future.

Jesus answered, "I tell you, Peter; before the rooster crows today, you will deny three times that you know me." Luke 22:34

He knew what Satan was going to become before He ever created him. The question which we need to ask, therefore, is not "Why doesn't He destroy him?" but rather "Why did He create him in the first place?" Why would God have created a being, whom He knew would become evil and oppose Him? This also brings us to our second question (and this one is much harder to ask), "Why would God have created a being whom He knew would spend eternity burning in hell?" These questions get even harder when we realize they apply not only to the realm of angels but to the human race as well.

For wide is the gate and broad is the road that leads to destruction, and many enter through it. But small is the gate and narrow the road that leads to life, and only a few find it. Matthew 7:13,14

The answer to all this very unpleasant reality takes us all the way back to God's reason for creating us. Remember, He wanted children, not puppets or robots. In order for us to exist as human beings we must have free-wills. We must have the ability to think and to act and to decide for ourselves what choices to make. The only way for us to be able to make our own choices is for options to be available, and in order for options to be available, there must be a right one (good) and a wrong one (evil) accessible to us.

So, here we are, living beings with free-wills, with good and evil to choose from. Evil (sin and rebellion against God) must be an available option in order for our free-wills to exist, for us to exist as anything more than puppets or robots. We must be given the ability to disobey God for obeying Him to be an option, and we must be given the ability to reject Him for accepting Him to be an option. For a choice to exist, there must be another option. Our problem is we have all chosen the wrong one. We have all sinned--all rebelled against God.

... for all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God, ... Romans 3:23

This is why there is evil and why God allows it. He must, for our sake! If God got rid of evil, the

human race would cease to exist.

Now, since we can see that God must allow evil to exist, let's take a look at our other two questions.

B. WHY IS SATAN ALLOWED TO OPPOSE GOD?

Satan is allowed the freedom he has--the freedom to oppose God and to try to lead us in rebellion against Him--as this is also required for free-will choice. God cannot cause, lead, or tempt anyone to do evil (to act disobediently or to reject Him as Lord),

When tempted, no one should say, "God is tempting me." For God cannot be tempted by evil, nor does he tempt anyone; . . . James 1:13

but he can allow Satan to do so. For free-wills to truly exist, rebellion and rejection must not only be possible, they must be presented as options. An option is not an option unless we know that it is available. It's as if God has placed us at the end of a hall with no exits and is standing at the other end saying, "I love you, come to me, I have a plan for your life." He again, however, only wants us to come if we truly have the desire. He doesn't want us coming because there's no other way to go. So He has symbolically allowed Satan to knock a hole in the wall behind us to offer us another direction. Thus, Satan and his demons, with all their evil, all their power, and all their deception are ultimately going to be seen for what they are--tools in the hands of God, which will be disposed of in hell when they have served their purpose. [God will not have any pleasure throwing Satan into hell. He will grieve over sending him there, just as He would over sending you or me.]

God is love. 1 John 4:16

The Lord is not slow in keeping his promise, as some understand slowness. He is patient with you, not wanting anyone to perish, but everyone to come to repentance. 2 Peter 3:9

. . . for I am grieved over the disaster I have inflicted on you. Jeremiah 42:10

C. WHY DID GOD KNOWINGLY CREATE BEINGS WHOM HE KNEW WERE GOING TO REJECT HIM AND GO TO HELL?

This brings us to the next question, "Why must it be this way?" Why must God create beings, humans or angels, whom He knows are going to spend eternity burning in hell?

Before answering this question, let me again state that **no person--not one single human being--ever has to go to hell!** (Hell was created for Satan and his angels anyway.)

Then he will say to those on his left, 'Depart from me, you who are cursed, into the eternal fire prepared for the devil and his angels.' Matthew 25:41

Almighty God lowered Himself not only to the point of becoming human, but to the point of a horrible physical death to keep this from happening and salvation is available to all people.

For God so loved the world that he gave his one and only Son, that whoever believes in him shall not perish but have eternal life. John 3:16

Yet to all who received him, to those who believed in his name, he gave the right to become children of God— . . . John 1:12

He has created the way, shown us the way, and calls us to come that way, but it is up to us to accept it.

Jesus answered, "I am the way and the truth and the life. No one comes to the Father except through me. John 14:6

And herein lies the problem--it is up to us. It must be up to us! In order for us to have the freedom to accept Jesus and spend eternity with Him in heaven, we must have the freedom to reject Him and spend eternity without Him in hell.

Understanding all of this, we are now drawn to ask one final question: "Why does there have to be a hell?"

D. WHY DOES THERE HAVE TO BE A HELL?

Why must God eternally punish those who reject salvation as opposed to just letting them cease to exist at death? Isn't being eternally deprived of heaven and of His presence enough? Why must they suffer forever? The only clear answer the Bible gives to this question has to do with justice: God's justness requires that sin be punished. We could still ask the question, though: "Isn't the cessation of life enough punishment?" Do they really need to burn in hell? The Bible does not give us a clear answer to this question, but I can tell you what I believe.

When we human beings come into to this world, we do so with sin in our nature and evil in our hearts.

Surely I was sinful at birth, sinful from the time my mother conceived me. Psalm 51:5

Never again will I curse the ground because of man, even though every inclination of his heart is evil from childhood. Genesis 8:21

We also come knowing in our hearts and experiencing with our senses (through creation) the obvious fact that God exists.

Indeed, when Gentiles, who do not have the law, do by nature things required by the law, they are a law for themselves, even though they do not have the law, since they show that the requirements of the law are written on their hearts, their consciences also bearing witness, and their thoughts now accusing, now even defending them. Romans 2:14,15

For since the creation of the world God's invisible qualities—his eternal power and divine nature— have been clearly seen, being understood from what has been made, so that men are without excuse. Romans 1:20

Because of this, every one of us has experienced some fear of having to answer to Him for things done in this life. Keeping this in mind, look at how incredibly evil we still are. Look at the terrible things we do to each other and at how horribly we turn away from God. If there were no fear of eternal punishment--no fear of lasting consequences resulting from evil done in this life and from rejecting our Creator--how evil would this world be? Would anyone survive? Wouldn't the human race have destroyed itself a long time ago? Unfortunately, I believe that the answer to this question is "Yes." The human race would have destroyed itself a long time ago.

From the eternal perspective, the question arises: “Without the fear of hell, would anyone be saved? Would God end up with any children?” Sadly, I believe the answer here is “No.” In addition to there not being anybody for God to call (as the human race would have destroyed itself), I believe that mankind is so evil, self-consumed, and twisted in its thinking that if we had no fear of eternal punishment, none of us would ask God to forgive us. We would all be born, live for ourselves, reject God, then die.

The heart is deceitful above all things and beyond cure. Who can understand it? Jeremiah 17:9

There is no one righteous, not even one; there is no one who understands, no one who seeks God. Romans 3:10,11

God’s whole purpose for creation, His whole plan for obtaining children, would end up being a miserable failure.

Again, there are no scripture verses which state this, but I do know that in some cases it is unquestionably true. “How?” you may ask. Because it’s true with me. I love God with all my heart and soul and with every ounce of my existence. He is absolutely the most wonderful and blessed friend I have ever had, and the day I get to be with Him (unhindered) will be the most wonderful day I will have experienced up to that point in my life. His and my relationship, however, was not always this way. When I first accepted Him, I was told that He loved me and had died on the cross to keep me from burning in hell. It would be a lie to tell you hell wasn’t a factor in my accepting Him. Hell was scary (which is probably why Jesus talked about it during His earthly ministry more than He did heaven). So you see, the fact that hell exists is part of the reason I am going to heaven, part of the reason I am in this most blessed and eternal relationship with God. For that reason, I am glad that hell exists. Would I get rid of it if I could? Only if there were some other way for God’s plan to succeed, or some way to stop Adam and Eve from bringing sin into the world. But, there isn’t and I can’t. I can’t get rid of hell and I can’t change the past. All I can do is try to get people to accept the love, grace, and mercy which God offers.

This is why I have written this book and why God has led you to read it--because we both care! Heaven and hell are both real, and we are going to spend eternity in one of them.

Then they will go away to eternal punishment, but the righteous to eternal life. Matthew 25:46

We are born with a sinful nature,

Surely I was sinful at birth, sinful from the time my mother conceived me. Psalm 51:5

we have all broken God’s laws,

... for all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God, ... Romans 3:23

and we justly deserve to be punished in hell,

For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord. Romans 6:23

but God came to change all this.

For Christ died for sins once for all, the righteous for the unrighteous, to bring you to God. He was put to death in the body but made alive by the Spirit, . . . 1 Peter 3:18

By accepting Him as Lord and Savior, we are forgiven for our sins,

Not everyone who says to me, 'Lord, Lord,' will enter the kingdom of heaven, but only he who does the will of my Father who is in heaven. Matthew 7:21

All the prophets testify about him that everyone who believes in him receives forgiveness of sins through his name. Acts 10:43

we gain the permanent accompaniment of the Holy Spirit (Who enables us to control our sinful desires),

You, however, are controlled not by the sinful nature but by the Spirit, if the Spirit of God lives in you. And if anyone does not have the Spirit of Christ, he does not belong to Christ. Romans 8:9

we are spared the eternal consequences our sins deserve, and we receive the promise of everlasting life in heaven.

For God so loved the world that he gave his one and only Son, that whoever believes in him shall not perish but have eternal life. John 3:16

What more wonderful gifts could we ever receive?

Chapter A-6

WHAT IS HEAVEN?

YOU HAVE JUST DIED!

Your thoughts begin racing back and forth over your life, over the circumstances surrounding your death, and over all the things you thought you would do--everything you left unfinished. You think of the possessions you had, the plans you made, and the people you left behind. Strangely, however, none of that seems important right now. At this point in time, at this transitional moment, you know there is but one thing that matters, and that is God. You are so thankful you know Him and so grateful you have walked with Him.

As your thoughts continue racing, you suddenly find yourself in the presence of God's holy angels, staring at the most incredible sight that could ever be. There before you seated upon a magnificent, pure-sapphire throne is a sight so awesome, so incredible, so breathtakingly beautiful that words could never describe it. There before you, in all of His glory, arrayed with all majesty and honor, and surrounded by the brilliance of a rainbow, sits Almighty God, creator, ruler and judge of the entire universe.

Jesus answered him, "I tell you the truth, today you will be with me in paradise." Luke 23:43 (This was Jesus speaking to the confessed criminal who was being crucified next to Him.)

Above the expanse over their heads was what looked like a throne of sapphire, and high above on the throne was a figure like that of a man. I saw that from what appeared to be his waist up he looked like glowing metal, as if full of fire, and that from there down he looked like fire; and brilliant light surrounded him. Like the appearance of a rainbow in the clouds on a rainy day, so was the radiance around him. Ezekiel 1:26-28

You stare in total amazement, overcome by awe at the sight before you. Then as the Lord rises, you, almost trembling, yet filled with joy and excitement, quickly and reverently bow before Him, proclaiming that He (Jesus Christ) is your Lord.

The Lord then turns to face a group of angels who are gathered around an enormous book. After a moment of searching, one of them turns, and upon bowing very low before the throne, joyfully announces that your name is there--**your name is recorded in the Book of Life.**

If anyone's name was not found written in book of life, he was thrown into the lake of fire. Revelation 20:15

A shout of joy literally erupts around the throne as the whole room breaks forth into a celebration of rejoicing and praising God.

In the same way, I tell you, there is rejoicing in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner who repents. Luke 15:10

One of the angels, who has been standing behind you, now gets your attention and, with an enormous smile, congratulates you, welcomes you, and commends you for your decision to accept Jesus.

As the celebration continues, you turn once again to face the Lord, and this time you really see Him. As you look past all the excitement and past all the grandeur, you truly see the Lord your God--the Lord your Father. You look directly into the eyes of the One who loves you, the eyes that though seeing your every weakness, your every failure, even your earlier rebellion, continually and compassionately watched over you with love. You see the hands that have guided you, provided for you, protected you, and were nailed to the cross for your sins. And in His smile, you see His heart, the heart of a Father who has been longing for this moment, when He could be with you perfectly. Then, with the voice that both gave you life and called you to salvation, He speaks the words, **“Welcome home my child, I love you.”**

*How great is the love the Father has lavished on us, that we should be called children of God!
1 John 3:1*

After a most wonderful time of fellowship, the angel who first congratulated you begins moving toward a door at the side of the room and motions for you to follow. You look questioningly at the Lord, and He tells you, **“Go and see. Go and look at your inheritance.”**

Then the King will say to those on his right, ‘Come, you who are blessed by my Father; take your inheritance, the kingdom prepared for you since the creation of the world. Matthew 25:34

As you follow the angel out of the room, you become instantly and wonderfully aware of the continued presence of the Lord. You feel His presence infinitely more than you had ever experienced on earth. You just stop and smile, feeling totally immersed in the love of God and knowing that it will be like this forever.

As you stand there just enjoying the feeling, you suddenly begin to notice your surroundings. You are in a city, an incredible city, a city beyond all cities. It’s magnificent--bigger, brighter, and more beautiful than any place you have ever imagined. It stretches farther, reaches higher, and spreads out wider than any city that man has ever dreamed of. It’s impeccably clean, incredibly pure, and it sparkles. The whole city sparkles! As you take a closer look, you realize it’s gold! The city is made of gold, even the streets! And there are jewels--gems and crystals--everywhere. Millions of them! Billions of them! Emeralds and sapphires, amethyst, topaz, jasper, jacinth, and many others--all reflecting the beautiful light into every color in the spectrum. There is also a dazzling wall of jasper surrounding the city with enormous pearl gates.

The city was laid out like a square, as long as it was wide. He measured the city with the rod and found it to be 12,000 stadia in length (1400 miles), and as wide and high as it is long. He measured its wall and it was 144 cubits (200 feet) thick . . . The wall was made of jasper, and the city of pure gold, as pure as glass. The foundations of the city walls were decorated with every kind of precious stone. . . The twelve gates were twelve pearls, each gate made of a single pearl. The great street of the city was of pure gold, like transparent glass. Revelation 21:16-19,21

As you continue looking around, observing that it is the same in every direction, you begin to notice something else. There are no shadows. It’s as if the light comes from every direction. As you look up to find the position of the sun, you amazingly can’t find it. The sun is not there! You look at the angel (undoubtedly with a very bewildered look on your face), and he smiles and says, “We don’t need it here; heaven is lighted by the glory of God.” Your next question is naturally about night (is there such a thing?), and he tells you, “You will never experience darkness again.” Somehow you understand that he is not only talking about physical darkness, but spiritual darkness as well. Here,

there is no sin, nor any of its results, no sickness, sadness, death, pain, loneliness, or heartache.

The city does not need the sun or the moon to shine on it, for the glory of God gives it light, and the Lamb is its lamp. . . . On no day will its gates ever be shut, for there will be no night there. . . . Nothing impure will ever enter into it, nor will anyone who does what is shameful or deceitful, but only those whose names are written in the Lamb's book of life. Revelation 21:23,25,27

He will wipe away every tear from their eyes. There will be no more death or mourning or crying or pain, for the old order of things has passed away. Revelation 21:4

You also see a beautiful river as clear as crystal flowing out from the Lord's throne and directly down the middle of the main street of the city. Also, on each side of the river is a tree, a strange and beautiful tree, bearing wonderful crops of fruit on every limb.

Then the angel showed me the river of the water of life, as clear as crystal, flowing from the throne of God and of the Lamb down the middle of the great street of the city. On each side of the river stood the tree of life, bearing twelve crops of fruit, yielding its fruit every month. Revelation 22:1,2

The angel explains that this "tree of life" had originally been in the Garden of Eden, but after Adam and Eve sinned, the Lord had to keep them away from it. If they had eaten its fruit at that time (after they had sinned), they would have had to live forever separated from Him.

The man has now become like one of us, knowing good and evil. He must not be allowed to reach out his hand and take also from the tree of life and eat, and live forever. Genesis 3:22

The angel once again starts walking and tells you, "Come on, there are some people waiting to see you." After a few steps, you begin to see some people off in the distance. As you get closer, you begin to recognize them. They are the people whom you knew on earth--the ones who had accepted Jesus and were able to come to this blessed place before you. You see friends, family members, and other acquaintances, many of whom you have not seen in a very long time. As they come to greet you, you feel for them a pure, undefiled, Christ-like (all is forgiven) love, and you know they feel the same for you. They come with hugs and kisses, hand shakes, and joyous "welcome-home" smiles on their faces.

Your friends and loved ones then begin to tell you all about the wonderful life here in heaven and how, even with the lack of marriage (the lack of individual families),

When the dead rise, they will never marry nor be given in marriage; they will be like the angels in heaven. Mark 12:25

your relationships are all such a blessing. (You get to spend all of eternity with your forgiven loved ones, but there is no separation from the love of others.) They also tell you about the wonderful things that God is planning to do--both here and on earth--and that someday, this whole glorious city is going to descend to rest upon a brand-new earth. You question, "So heaven is going to be on earth?"

The angel quickly reiterates, "Not on earth; upon the 'new earth,' a whole new and glorious planet." He explains that the new one will be very much different from the one which now exists and far more beautiful. It will have no deserts, no seas, and just as it is in this city, the new earth will have no sun. It too will be lighted by the glory of God. Man shall never again suffer the heat of the sun, the freezing cold of winter, or anything else which would make him uncomfortable.

Then I saw a new heaven and a new earth, for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away, and there was no longer any sea. I saw the Holy City, the new Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God, prepared as a bride beautifully dressed for her husband. Revelation 21:1,2

There will be no more night. They will not need the light of a lamp or the light of the sun, for the Lord

God will give them light. And they will reign for ever and ever. Revelation 22:5

The sun will not beat upon them, nor any scorching heat. Revelation 7:16

He then explains that before that time, over a thousand years from now, there are many more things which must first take place. God is even now preparing to remove the rest of His children from the earth,

For the Lord himself will come down from heaven, with a loud command, with the voice of the archangel and with the trumpet call of God, and the dead in Christ will rise first. After that, we who are still alive and are left will be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air. And so we will be with the Lord forever. 1 Thessalonians 4:16-17

(This is referring to what is commonly referred to as the “Rapture,” and at this time, Christians in heaven will receive back their bodies, new and glorified.)

and is then going to pour out His wrath on the remaining inhabitants (all the people who have rejected Him). The earth is about to experience what the Bible calls the “**tribulation**”--seven years of the most horrible judgment it ever has, or ever will see. The last half is actually referred to as the “**great tribulation,**” as it is going to be far more severe than the first half.

These are they who have come out of the great tribulation; they have washed their robes and made them white in the blood of the Lamb. Revelation 7:14

This judgment (just one part of which is another world war)

They are spirits of demons performing miraculous signs, and they go out to the kings of the whole world, to gather them for the battle on the great day of God Almighty. Revelation 16:14

is going to be so severe that most of the people left on earth will die. (One of God’s major forms of judgment has always been to let humanity destroy itself through war.)

See, the LORD is going to lay waste to the earth and devastate it; he will ruin its face and scatter its inhabitants . . . Therefore a curse consumes the earth; its people must bear their guilt. Therefore earth’s inhabitants are burned up, and very few are left. Isaiah 24:1,6

The end will come like a flood: War will continue until the end, and desolations have been decreed. He will confirm a covenant with many for one ‘seven.’ In the middle of the ‘seven’ he will put an end to sacrifice and offering. And on a wing of the temple he will set up an abomination that causes desolation, until the end that is decreed is poured out on him. Daniel 9:26-27

From the time that the daily sacrifice is abolished and the abomination that causes desolation is set up, there will be 1,290 days. Blessed is the one who waits for and reaches the end of the 1,335 days. Daniel 12:11

Near the end, it is going to be so horrible that many of the rebellious people who are left are going to want to die, but they will not be able to--for a time.

During those days men will seek death, but will not find it; they will long to die, but death will elude them. Revelation 9:6

At the end of this time, however, just before all remaining life on earth is about to be destroyed, Jesus will return and stop it. He will then set up an earthly kingdom and physically rule the world--from Jerusalem--for a thousand years (a millennium).

The moon will be abashed, the sun ashamed; for the LORD Almighty will reign on Mount Zion and in Jerusalem, and before its elders, gloriously. Isaiah 24:23

Blessed and holy are those who have part in the first resurrection. The second death has no power over them, but they will be priests of God and of Christ and will reign with him for a thousand years.

Revelation 20:6

Jesus will be the World Ruler, and for the first time since the beginning of sin, there really will be **peace on earth**. Even the animals will live in peace.

The wolf will live with the lamb, the leopard will lie down with the goat, the calf and the lion and the yearling together; and a little child will lead them. Isaiah 11:6

One of your loved ones then excitedly says, “And we get to be there too! We get to go back with Him--in our new glorified bodies—

All flesh is not the same: Men have one kind of flesh, animals have another, birds another and fish another. There are also heavenly bodies and there are earthly bodies; but the splendor of the heavenly bodies is one kind, and the splendor of the earthly bodies is another. . . . So it will be with the resurrection of the dead. The body that is sown is perishable, it is raised imperishable; it is sown in dishonor, it is raised in glory; it is sown in weakness, it is raised in power; it is sown a natural body, it is raised a spiritual body. 1 Corinthians 15:39,40,42-44

to help Him rule.”

Blessed and holy are those who have part in the first resurrection. The second death has no power over them, but they will be priests of God and of Christ and will reign with Him for a thousand years. Revelation 20:6

(The more we serve God in this life, the more authority we will have in the next.)

His master replied, 'Well done, good and faithful servant! You have been faithful with a few things; I will put you in charge of many things. Come and share your master's happiness!' Matthew 25:23

The angel then tells you that unfortunately, in order to make this blessed time possible, God is going to put to death every person left who refuses to accept Him during this time of judgment. He is going to do it instantaneously upon His return.

I saw heaven standing open and there before me was a white horse, whose rider is called Faithful and True. . . Out of his mouth comes a sharp sword with which to strike down the nations. . . And I saw an angel standing in the sun, who cried in a loud voice to all the birds flying in midair, “Come, gather together for the great supper of God, so that you may eat the flesh of kings, generals, and mighty men, of horses and their riders, and the flesh of all people, free and slave, small and great.” Then I saw the beast and the kings of the earth and their armies gathered together to make war against the rider on the horse and his army. But the beast was captured, and with him the false prophet who had performed the miraculous signs on his behalf. . . The two of them were thrown alive into the fiery lake of burning sulfur. The rest of them were killed with the sword that came out of the mouth of the rider on the horse, and all the birds gorged themselves on their flesh. Revelation 19:11,15,17-21

The only people who are going to enter into these thousand years of peace--in their earthly bodies--are the ones who accept salvation during the tribulation and survive until the end. Unfortunately, this is not going to be easy. Becoming a Christian during the tribulation will most likely get people killed, as the world ruler during this time will be personally controlled by Satan. (He’s going to make Hitler look like a bad kid.) The Bible refers to this man in many ways--the “anti-Christ,” the “beast,” the “abomination that causes desolation,” and the “man of lawlessness”--and he is going to kill every Christian (and every Jew) that God allows.

The dragon gave the beast his power and his throne and great authority. . . Men worshiped the dragon because he had given authority to the beast, and they also worshiped the beast and asked, “Who is like the beast? Who can make war against him?” Revelation 13:2,4

The beast was given a mouth to utter proud words and blasphemies and to exercise his authority for forty-two months. . . He was given power to make war against the saints and to conquer them. And he

was given authority over every tribe, people, language and nation. Revelation 13:5,7

At the end of this time of judgment, Satan will be confined to keep him from influencing the world throughout the thousand years of peace.

He seized the dragon, that ancient serpent, who is the devil, or Satan, and bound him for a thousand years. He threw him into the Abyss, and locked and sealed it over him, to keep him from deceiving the nations anymore until the thousand years were ended. After that, he must be set free for a short time. Revelation 20:2,3

Consequently, the only sin problems people will face will be their own fallen natures. There will still be sin, and many who will be born during these thousand years are going to reject God; but between Jesus ruling the world, the absence of Satan, and God's glorified children being there to help fight evil, this time will indeed be blessed.

Blessed and holy are those who have part in the first resurrection. The second death has no power over them, but they will be priests of God and of Christ and will reign with him for a thousand years. Revelation 20:6

At the end of this thousand year period, Satan will again be released for a short period of time. He will provide the people on earth with a final opportunity to choose between following him and their own sinful natures or following God. There will be one final war and then it will all end. God will throw Satan and the rest of the demons into the lake of fire--where they will be tormented day and night forever--

When the thousand years are over, Satan will be released from his prison and will go out to deceive the nations in the four corners of the earth—Gog and Magog—to gather them for battle. In number they are like the sand on the seashore. They marched across the breadth of the earth and surrounded the camp of God's people, the city he loves. But fire came down from heaven and devoured them. And the devil, who deceived them, was thrown into the lake of burning sulfur, where the beast and the false prophet had been thrown. They will be tormented day and night for ever and ever. . . and service to Him during their earthy lives. The people who rejected Him will be judged and eternally punished for their every sin (for which they had refused to accept His forgiveness). Then they too--like Satan--will be eternally punished in the lake of fire.

Then I saw a great white throne and him who was seated on it. . . And I saw the dead, great and small, standing before the throne, and books were opened. Another book was opened, which is the book of life. The dead were judged according to what they had done as recorded in the books. . . If anyone's name was not found written in the book of life, he was thrown into the lake of fire. Revelation 20:11,12,15

God will then create the new heavens and the new earth and set His throne upon it--when this glorious city descends. His blessed, perfect, and eternal kingdom will at last be established and we will be there with Him living and loving and reigning forever.

forever!

Forever!

Forever!

Forever!

Then I saw a new heaven and a new earth, for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away, and there was no longer any sea. I saw the Holy City, the new Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God, prepared as a bride beautifully dressed for her husband. And I heard a loud voice from the throne saying, "Now the dwelling of God is with men, and he will live with them. They will be his people, and God himself will be with them and be their God. He will wipe away every tear from their eyes. There will be no more death or mourning or crying or pain, for the old order of things has passed away." Revelation 21:1-4

There will be no more night. They will not need the light of a lamp or the light of the sun, for the Lord God will give them light. And they will reign for ever and ever. Revelation 22:5

Then they will go away to eternal punishment, but the righteous to eternal life. Matthew 25:46

Chapter A-7

HOW DO WE GET TO HEAVEN?

The answer to this question is really quite simple. God created us to have an eternal relationship with Him. We were created by God, for God! We get to heaven by fulfilling the reason for our existence, by achieving our purpose in life--“by accepting this relationship with God!” This is accomplished when we accept Him as God (as existing and being above us), as Lord (as being our authority), and as Savior (as offering to forgive our sins and providing the necessary sacrifice to make this forgiveness possible).

So how do you do this?

STEP A: WANT GOD.

No one ever found Him by accident!

You will seek me and find me when you seek me with all your heart. Jeremiah 29:13

STEP B: ACCEPT GOD.

Enter into this relationship with Him--accepting Him as your God, your Lord, and your Savior.

Seek the LORD while he may be found; call on him while he is near. Isaiah 55:6

And everyone who calls on the name of the Lord will be saved. Acts 2:21

1. ACCEPT HIM (JESUS) AS GOD.

Accept that He is, that He does exist, and that He is God, Creator, Ruler.

Who has established all the ends of the earth? What is his name, and the name of his son? Proverbs 30:4

For to us a child is born, to us a son is given, and the government will be on his shoulders. And He will be called Wonderful Counselor, Mighty God, Everlasting Father, Prince of Peace. Isaiah 9:6

In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was with God in the beginning. Through him all things were made; without him nothing was made that has been made. . . .

The Word became flesh and made his dwelling among us. John 1:1-3,14

Moses said to God, "Suppose I go to the Israelites and say to them, 'The God of your fathers has sent me to you,' and they ask me, 'What is his name?' Then what shall I tell them?" God said to Moses, "I AM WHO I AM. This is what you are to say to the Israelites: I AM has sent me to you." Exodus 3:13,14

"I tell you the truth," Jesus answered, "before Abraham was born, I am!" John 8:58

2. ACCEPT HIM AS YOUR LORD.

Accept Him as your Lord. Give Him the position of ultimate authority in your life. Make Him the boss! This means that we accept what He says as truth, we do what He tells us to do, and we don't do what He tells us not to do.

Please note that I have listed accepting Jesus as Lord before accepting Him as Savior. This is not to say that we actually do one before the other, but rather, to bring up an extremely important point. We cannot accept Jesus as Savior while rejecting Him as Lord.

Not everyone who says to me, 'Lord, Lord,' will enter the kingdom of heaven, but only he who does the will of my Father who is in heaven. Matthew 7:21

As the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without deeds is dead. James 2:26

There are, I fear, many people who think we can--many people who are going to be shocked when they end up in hell. God tells us to repent--to turn away from our sins--and come to Him for salvation.

Repent, then, and turn to God, so that your sins may be wiped out, that times of refreshing may come from the Lord, and that he may send the Christ, who has been appointed for you—even Jesus. Acts 3:19,21

When we ask Jesus to become our Savior, we are asking Him to forgive our sins, our rebellion, our disobedience to His lordship. We are asking for His forgiveness for each and every time we have failed to obey Him as Lord. To ask Him to be our Savior without also asking Him to be our Lord is the same as saying, "Dear God, please forgive me for disobeying you while I continue to disobey you."

The man who says "I know him," but does not do what he commands is a liar, and the truth is not in him. 1 John 2:4

What God says about sin and salvation is:

*** We are all sinful. We have all disobeyed God!**

. . . for there is no one who does not sin . . . 1 Kings 8:46

. . . for all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God, . . . Romans 3:23

*** Only sinless perfection is allowed into heaven.**

Nothing impure will ever enter it, nor will anyone who does what is shameful or deceitful, but only those whose names are written in the Lamb's book of life. Revelation 21:27

*** There is nothing we can do to remove our sin: Good deeds are after the fact!**

All of us have become like one who is unclean, and all our righteous acts are like filthy rags; . . . Isaiah 64:6

For it is by grace you have been saved, through faith—and this not from yourselves, it is the gift of God—not by works, so that no one can boast. Ephesians 2:8,9

*** God (the Son) stepped into our world--born as a human--to fix this problem for us.**

For to us a child is born, to us a son is given, and the government will be on his shoulders. And He will be called Wonderful Counselor, Mighty God, Everlasting Father, Prince of Peace. Isaiah 9:6

In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was with God in the beginning. Through him all things were made; without him nothing was made that has been made. . . . The Word became flesh and made his dwelling among us. John 1:1-3,14

*** He suffered and died on the cross for our sins, taking the justly required punishment for them.**

But he was pierced for our transgression, he was crushed for our iniquities; the punishment that brought us peace was upon him, and by his wounds we are healed. We all, like sheep, have gone astray, each of us has turned to his own way; and the LORD has laid on him the iniquity of us all. Isaiah 53:5,6

For Christ died for sins once for all, the righteous for the unrighteous, to bring you to God. He was put to death in the body but made alive by the Spirit, . . . 1 Peter 3:18

*** By repenting (resigning from being our own gods in favor of His authority),**

Repent! Turn away from all your offenses; then sin will not be your downfall. Rid yourself of all the offenses you have committed, and get a new heart and a new spirit. Ezekiel 18:30,31

Repent, then, and turn to God, so that your sins may be wiped out, that times of refreshing may come from the Lord, and that he may send the Christ, who has been appointed for you—even Jesus. Acts 3:19,20

and trusting Him and His power to save us, we are forgiven for our sins and are made righteous and pure.

Abraham believed the LORD, and he credited it to him as righteousness. Genesis 15:6

Believe in the Lord Jesus, and you will be saved—you and your household. Acts 16:31

*** In this condition, we will get into heaven and live forever.**

For God so loved the world that he gave his one and only Son, that whoever believes in him shall not perish but have eternal life. John 3:16

*** There is no other way to be forgiven and to live forever in heaven.**

He who has the Son has life; he who does not have the Son of God does not have life 1 John 5:12

I am the way and the truth and the life. No one comes to the Father except through me. John 14:6

3. ACCEPT HIM AS YOUR SAVIOR.

Accept His death as the **full payment** for your sins--the only available and only needed payment. Please understand that accepting is more than just acknowledging, saying, or even believing

that something is true. It is an action--a decision that we make, a step that we take. Simply acknowledging that Jesus is Lord and Savior doesn't make you a Christian any more than acknowledging that Hitler was ruler of Germany would have made you a Nazi. To better explain this point, please allow me to share the following vision which God gave me specifically for this purpose. Through it we can see what it truly means to put faith in something to save us.

During the night Paul had a vision of a man of Macedonia standing and begging him, "Come over to Macedonia and help us." After Paul had seen the vision, we got ready at once to leave for Macedonia, concluding that God had called us to preach the gospel to them. Acts 16:9-10

What God showed me was a very long, very narrow room. At one end was a door and at the opposite end was a window. There were no other entrances or exits. Sitting in the very center of this room, facing the window, was a chair. That chair is where each one of us sits. It is the throne of our life. It is where we sit as our own gods--as the rulers of our own lives. God then showed me that the room was on fire. The whole end of the room where the door was located was engulfed in flames and the fire was growing. At the other end was the window (salvation). All the person in the chair had to do was to get up, go over to the window, and climb out; but he had to do it. Merely believing that the window was the way to salvation wasn't enough. Simply saying it wouldn't save him either. The person had to get out of the chair and go through the window.

So it is with Jesus: He is the window, and we must leave our thrones and go to Him. We must give up the authority of our lives, humble ourselves, and accept Him--as God, as Lord, as Savior. That's all we have to do! We don't have to work our way to heaven. We don't have to be good enough to get to heaven. Nobody is good enough to get to heaven!

All of us have become like one who is unclean, and all our righteous acts are like filthy rags; . . . Isaiah 64:6

. . . for all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God, . . . Romans 3:23

(People who try to be good so they can go to heaven, go to hell!)

There is a way that seems right to a man, but in the end it leads to death. Proverbs 14:12

All we have to do is accept the free gift of salvation. As a matter of fact, the Bible tells us that anything which we try to offer God for our salvation--anything we feel makes us worthy--is pride, and pride is simply another sin.

For it is by grace you have been saved, through faith—and this not from yourselves, it is the gift of God—not by works, so that no one can boast. Ephesians 2:8,9

Before leaving this subject, there is one more part of the vision that I need to mention: The room was filling with smoke, and the window was getting hard to see. If you have not personally accepted Jesus as your Lord and Savior, the fires of hell are lapping at your back. If you don't move now, you may never find the window.

Chapter A-8

WHAT ABOUT PEOPLE WHO HAVE NEVER HAD THE BIBLE?

Please note that I did not entitle this chapter, “What about the people who have never had Jesus?” or “What about the people who have never had the New Testament?” The Israelites (Jews) who have the Old Testament (the first part of the Bible), but who say they do not have Jesus (the Messiah), are wrong! The Old Testament is all about Jesus! The Old Testament clearly tells us that even though God is one,

Hear, O Israel: The Lord our God, the Lord is one. Deuteronomy 6:4

He is also plural,

Then God said, “Let us make man in our image, in our likeness . . . So God created man in his own image, in the image of God he created him; male and female he created them. Genesis 1:26,27

and that He is Father, Son, and Holy Spirit.

Who has established all the ends of the earth? What is his name, and the name of his son? Proverbs 30:4

Yet they rebelled and grieved his Holy Spirit. Isaiah 63:10

It foretold that the Son would come into the world

For to us a child is born, to us a son is given, and the government will be on his shoulders. And he will be called Wonderful Counselor, Mighty God, Everlasting Father, Prince of Peace. Isaiah 9:6

to die for our sins

Surely he took up our infirmities and carried our sorrows, yet we considered him stricken by God, smitten by him, and afflicted. But he was pierced for our transgressions, he was crushed for our iniquities; the punishment that brought us peace was upon him, and by his wounds we are healed. We all, like sheep, have gone astray, each of us has turned to his own way; and the LORD has laid on him the iniquity of us all. Isaiah 53:4-6

and it even foretold when.

Know and understand this: From the issuing of the decree to restore and rebuild Jerusalem until the Anointed One, the ruler, comes, there will be seven 'sevens,' and sixty-two 'sevens.' It will be rebuilt with streets and a trench, but in times of trouble. After the sixty-two 'sevens,' the Anointed One will be cut off and will have nothing. The people of the ruler who will come will destroy the city and the sanctuary. Daniel 9:25,26

It foretold He would be born of a virgin,

Therefore the LORD himself will give you a sign: The virgin will be with child and will give birth to a son, and will call him Immanuel [Immanuel means “God with us.”] Isaiah 7:14

in the line of Jesse (the father of King David),

In that day the Root of Jesse will stand as a banner for the peoples; the nations shall rally to him, and his place of rest will be glorious. Isaiah 11:10

in the town of Bethlehem,

But you, Bethlehem Ephrathah, though you are small among the clans of Judah, out of you will come for me one who will be ruler over Israel, whose origins are from old, from ancient times. Micah 5:2

and come from Galilee.

Nevertheless, there will be no more gloom for those who were in distress. In the past he humbled the land of Zebulun and the land of Naphtali, but in the future he will honor Galilee of the Gentiles, by the way of the sea, along the Jordan—The people walking in darkness have seen a great light; on those living in the land of the shadow of death a light has dawned. Isaiah 9:1,2

It foretold He would die by crucifixion,

Dogs have surrounded me; a band of evil men has encircled me, they have pierced my hands and feet. Psalm 22:16

soldiers would gamble for His garments,

They divide my garments among them and cast lots for my clothing. Psalm 22:18

and He would rise again from the dead.

Therefore my heart is glad and my tongue rejoices; my body will also rest secure, because you will not abandon me to the grave, nor will you let your Holy One see decay. Psalm 16:9,10

Anybody who knows the story of Jesus' life, death, and resurrection from the New Testament knows that this is the exact same story.

In the sixth month, God sent the angel Gabriel to Nazareth, a town in Galilee, to a virgin pledged to be married to a man named Joseph, a descendant of David. . . You will be with child and give birth to a son, and you are to give him the name Jesus. Luke 1.26,27,31

After Jesus was born in Bethlehem in Judea, . . . Matthew 2:1

It was the third hour when they crucified him. Mark 15:25

“Let's not tear it,” they said to one another. “Let's decide by lot who will get it.” John 19:24

For Christ died for sins once for all, the righteous for the unrighteous, to bring you to God. He was put to death in the body but made alive by the Spirit, . . . 1 Peter 3:18

There were also **many** other Old Testament prophecies fulfilled by Jesus' earthly visit.

Now, in regard to people who have never had the Bible, I personally cannot tell you all the ways in which God has presented His offer of salvation, throughout time or around the world. There are, however, three things which I can tell you. First, Almighty God--creator of time, space, energy, matter, life, and human languages—

The LORD said, “If as one people speaking the same language they have begun to do this, then nothing they plan to do will be impossible for them. Come, let us go down and confuse their language so they will not understand each other. Genesis 11:6,7

is not restricted by our sorely limited knowledge or abilities. He is perfectly capable of communicating with people directly. He spoke directly to people who lived before the Bible,

So the LORD said to him, “Bring me a heifer, a goat and a ram, each three years old, along with a dove

and a young pigeon.” Genesis 15:9

to the people whom He divinely inspired to write the Bible,

All scripture is God-breathed and is useful for teaching, rebuking, correcting and training in righteousness . . . 2 Timothy 3:16

and still speaks directly to people today.

When you are brought before synagogues, rulers and authorities, do not worry about how you will defend yourselves or what you will say, for the Holy Spirit will teach you at that time what you should say. Luke 12:11-12

He can also have messages delivered in ways beyond our understanding. He once created an unattached human hand to write a message to a king (foretelling the king's destruction)

Suddenly the fingers of a human hand appeared and wrote on the plaster of the wall, near the lampstand in the royal palace. The king watched the hand as it wrote. His face turned pale and he was so frightened that his knees knocked together and his legs gave way. Daniel 5:5,6

and has transported His human messengers in ways unrestricted by either time or space.

When they came up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord suddenly took Philip away, and the eunuch did not see him again, but went on his way rejoicing. Acts 8:39

He once even delivered His message of salvation in a realm which does not apply to our world today.

For Christ died for sins once for all, the righteous for the unrighteous, to bring you to God. He was put to death in the body but made alive by the Spirit, through whom also he went and preached to the spirits in prison who disobeyed long ago when God waited patiently in the days of Noah while the ark was being built. 1 Peter 4:18-20

Secondly--and this is very important--the message is always the same. No matter how it is delivered, or by whom, the message is always: “Humble yourself before Almighty God, repent of your sins (disobedience), and trust in Him to save you.”

Repent and be baptized, every one of you, in the name of Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of your sins. Acts 2:38

This is the only way that people ever have been, or ever will be, declared righteous, so they can get to heaven.

Abraham believed the Lord, and he credited it to him as righteousness. Genesis 15:6

Thirdly--and this is equally important--once you have heard His offer (which you now have), you will have no excuse for rejecting it. God's offer is laid out before you. You can accept it and spend eternity in heaven, or you can reject it, or even ignore it, and spend eternity in hell. The choice is, once again, up to you.

[“Christianity vs. Religion.” Please understand that I am not suggesting God would ever come to someone through a false religious system--as opposed to Christianity. Christianity and religions are totally different! First of all, Christianity is a loving, personal relationship with our Heavenly Father, while religions are simply systems of worship, which can be aimed at anything--an idea, a man-made idol, nature, the sun, or some distant, untouchable god whom we could never know. Secondly, God tells us that we must humbly and repentantly come before Him, asking for forgiveness, putting faith in what He has done for us--to get to heaven. Religions, on the other hand, allow for incredible, and sometimes absurd, pride. Some of them teach that people are god; some of them teach that people can become god; and the rest of them teach that people can get to God (or heaven) by their own abilities.]

For it is by grace you have been saved, through faith—and this not from yourselves, it is the gift of God—not by works, so that no one can boast. Ephesians 2:8,9

Chapter A-9

WHAT IS HELL?

YOU HAVE JUST DIED!

And I'll say to myself, "You have plenty of good things laid up for many years. Take life easy; eat, drink and be merry." But God said to him, 'You fool! This very night your life will be demanded from you.'
Luke 12:19,20

Your thoughts begin racing back and forth over your life, over the circumstances surrounding your death, and over all the things you thought you would do--everything you left unfinished. You think of the possessions you had, the plans you had made, and the people you left behind. One haunting thought, however, one terrible, frightening thought invades your mind, overshadowing everything else. You try not to think about it, but it hangs over you almost with a presence--like a thick dark cloud. You try to forget it, but it keeps coming back again, and again, and again. **“YOU NEVER ACCEPTED JESUS!”** You rejected every call, every offer of a personal relationship with Almighty God, and now you are about to face Him. You rejected His love, His sacrifice, His offer of forgiveness, and His rightful authority as Lord of your life. You will not reject His judgment!

Just as man is destined to die once, and after that to face judgment . . . Hebrews 9:27

As you continue struggling to control your thoughts, you suddenly find yourself in the presence of God's holy angels, standing before an incredible throne. It is a throne that could have been magnificent to behold, but for you, it creates sheer terror. Then, as He who is sitting upon the throne rises, you instantly find yourself in a kneeling position, as all of those around you joyfully confess that, **“He Is Lord!”**

Therefore God exalted him to the highest place and gave him the name that is above every name, that at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, in heaven and on earth and under the earth, and every tongue confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father. Philippians 2:9-11

Now, in addition to the turmoil in your head and the terror in your heart, you also feel incredibly filthy--incredibly sinful--standing in the presence of **Perfect Holiness**. You know that He sees right through you, knowing every godless act you have ever committed,

Nothing in all creation is hidden from God's sight. Everything is uncovered and laid bare before the eyes of him to whom we must give account. Hebrews 4:13

every vile, profane, and derogatory word you have ever spoken,

But I tell you that men will have to give account on the day of judgment, for every careless word they have spoken. Matthew 12:36

and every evil thought you have ever harbored.

. . . for the Lord searches every heart and understands every motive behind the thoughts.
1 Chronicles 28:9

The Lord then turns to face a group of angels who are gathered around an enormous book. After a moment of searching, one of the angels turns, and upon bowing very low before the throne, declares that your name is not there: **“Your name is not recorded in the Book of Life!”**

*If anyone’s name was not found written in the book of life, he was thrown into the lake of fire.
Revelation 20:15*

Your thoughts begin racing faster. You want to say something to defend yourself, but what? What could you possibly say that He doesn’t know? You know that He knows everything.

Now I know in part; then I shall know fully, even as I am fully known. 1 Corinthians 13:12

He knows you rejected Him and His call on your life, that you despised His wanting to be your God.

The Lord then turns to you, and with a voice as powerful as the raging seas, speaks the words, **“Depart from me, I never knew you!”**

Then I will tell them plainly, ‘I never knew you. Away from me, you evildoers!’ Matthew 7:23

The words echo in your mind, each reverberation getting louder, **and louder, and louder.** You feel as if you are going to explode. You want to run, you want to hide, you want to scream, but all you can do is watch.

The angel who has been standing to your left now reaches over and lifts you to your feet. He then begins to lead you out from the presence of the Lord. Resistance is not an option, as you have absolutely no ability to do anything except follow. As you reach the door and are about to exit, you turn one last time for a final look at the **“One”** who was to have been your God. To your surprise, and even more disheartening, you see the face of a **Father with a broken heart. There are tears in His eyes!** Finally, now that it is too late, you realize the immense and eternal love which you have rejected.

As he approached Jerusalem and saw the city, he wept over it and said, . . . because you did not recognize the time of God’s coming to you. Luke 19:41,44

. . . for I am grieved over the disaster I have inflicted on you. Jeremiah 42:10

As you pass through the door, you are somehow aware of having just traveled an immeasurable distance, being farther from God than you have ever been. Even in your rebellion, in the darkest moments of your life, you never felt such a distance, such a separation from His goodness and grace. You begin to feel the loneliness, the emptiness, the hopelessness of being without God. The angel who brought you here now informs you that judgment (the reviewing of your sins and the determination of the degree of your eternal punishment),

But it will be more bearable for Tyre and Sidon at the judgment than for you. Luke 10:14

(Note the levels of punishment — “more bearable.”)

will not take place until after the millennium (the thousand years in which Jesus is going to physically rule the earth).

When the thousand years are over, Satan will be released (verse 7) / And the devil, who deceived them, was thrown into the lake of burning sulphur (verse 10) / Then I saw a great white throne (verse 11) / The dead were judged (verse 12) Revelation 20:7,10,11,12 (Judgment after Millennium)

The beginning of punishment, however, will not be delayed.

. . . the Lord knows how to rescue godly men from trials and to hold the unrighteous for the day of judgment, while continuing their punishment. 2 Peter 2:9

As the angel disappears, you are engulfed by a darkness you have never known—a darkness so thick you can feel it.

Stretch out our hand toward the sky so that darkness will spread over Egypt—darkness that can be felt. Exodus 10:21

These men are springs without water and mists driven by a storm. Blackest darkness is reserved for them. 2 Peter 2:17

Suddenly, you are assaulted by the stench of burning sulfur and by an intense heat all around you. It's like being in a fire, but there is no light--the fire gives no light! In shock, you gasp for air, but the breath just seems to draw it deep inside. You try to run, but you can't. You try to hide, but there's no place to go. You cover yourself with your arms, you shield your face, but nothing stops the heat! In desperation, you begin to cry and to grind your teeth. In anguish, you finally scream; but nobody hears you, nobody sees you, nobody can help you; and it will be like this forever.

Forever!

Forever!

Forever!

Forever!

The angels will come and separate the wicked from the righteous and throw them into the fiery furnace, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth. Matthew 13:49

And throw that worthless servant outside, into the darkness, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth. Matthew 25:30

“Then he will say to those on His left, ‘Depart from me, you who are cursed, into the eternal fire prepared for the devil and his angels.’ Matthew 25:41

He will be tormented with burning sulfur in the presence of the holy angels and of the Lamb. And the smoke of their torment rises for ever and ever. Revelation 14:10,11

Then they will go away to eternal punishment, but the righteous to eternal life. Matthew 25:46

But the cowardly, the unbelieving, the vile, the murderers, the sexually immoral, those who practice magic arts, the idolaters, and all liars—their place will be in the fiery lake of burning sulfur. Revelation 21:8

Multitudes who sleep in the dust of the earth will awake: some to everlasting life, others to shame and everlasting contempt. Daniel 12:2

Chapter A-10

HOW DO WE GET TO HELL?

If Jesus Christ is not your Lord and Savior, if you have not accepted His authority over your life and His forgiveness for your sins, **then all you have to do to spend eternity in hell, is die**. That's it! You simply have to choke the next time you're eating, wreck the next time you're driving, slip and hit your head, or die in any other way, and you will spend all of eternity suffering in the pitch black sulfuric fires of hell.

Here is why.

*** We have all sinned. I have sinned! You have sinned!**

... for all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God, ... Romans 3:23

If we claim to be without sin, we deceive ourselves and the truth is not in us. 1 John 1:8

*** The result of sin is physical death. This is the first death.**

Therefore, just as sin entered the world through one man, and death through sin, and in this way death came to all men, because all sinned—... Romans 5:12

*** The justly required punishment for sin is being condemned to eternal torment in the lake of fire. This is the second death.**

For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord. Romans 6:23

Nothing impure will ever enter it, nor will anyone who does what is shameful or deceitful, but only those whose names are written in the Lamb's book of life. Revelation 21:27

The lake of fire is the second death. If anyone's name was not found written in the Book of Life, he was thrown into the lake of fire. Revelation 20:14,15

And the devil, who deceived them, was thrown into the lake of burning sulphur, where the beast and the false prophet had been thrown. They will be tormented day and night for ever and ever. Revelation 20:10

*** Jesus came and died on the cross, taking upon Himself the punishment for our sins.**

He was delivered over to death for our sins and was raised to life for our justification. Romans 4:25

When you were dead in your sins and in the uncircumcision of your sinful nature, God made you alive with Christ. He forgave us all our sins, having canceled the written code, with its regulations, that was against us and that stood opposed to us; he took it away, nailing it to the cross. Colossians 2:13,14

*** By accepting Jesus as our Lord and Savior, we are forgiven for our sins.**

Repent, then, and turn to God, so that your sins may be wiped out, that times of refreshing may come from the Lord, and that he may send the Christ, who has been appointed for you—even Jesus. Acts 3:19,20

All the prophets testify about him that everyone who believes in him receives forgiveness of sins through his name. Acts 10:43

*** If we do not accept Him as Lord and Savior, we remain condemned.**

Whoever believes in the Son has eternal life, but whoever rejects the Son will not see life, for God's wrath remains on him. John 3:36

*** There is no other way to be forgiven.**

He who has the Son has life; he who does not have the Son of God does not have life. 1 John 5:12

Jesus answered, "I am the way and the truth and the life. No one comes to the Father except through me." John 14:6

Chapter A-11

SO WHAT SHOULD YOU DO?

A. ACCEPT JESUS AS LORD, GOD, AND SAVIOR.

Needless to say, the first step--if you haven't already taken it--is to accept Jesus as God, Lord, and Savior. Enter into this most beautiful of relationships and enjoy life forever. If before reading this book you had believed that you were saved but now, through an increased understanding of what salvation actually requires, you are no longer sure, be sure! Ask Him now! He is calling you at this very moment. He has watched you read this book and is now awaiting your answer. Just tell Him:

“Lord Jesus, I admit to you that I am a sinner--that I have broken your laws. I accept that because of my sin and the righteousness which you require, I deserve to be eternally punished in the lake of fire. I now turn from my sin; I resign from being my own god and accept you as my Lord. From this point forward, you will be the supreme authority in my life. I also choose to trust completely, to rely totally upon and only upon your death on the cross for the forgiveness of my sins. I accept your sacrifice as full payment for my sins (past, present, and future) and trust that by doing so, according to your Word (the Bible), I am forgiven. I also choose to trust that by your resurrection (by your being brought back to life after dying on the cross) you have overcome death, and in so doing, you have assured my resurrection also to eternal life with you.”

B. START LIVING YOUR RELATIONSHIP WITH GOD.

Next, you need to start doing your part to develop this oh-so-wonderful relationship. Start living the way God wants you to live! You have just entered into the most loving, accepting, forgiving, exciting, and rewarding relationship which you will ever experience. Don't stop short (as so many Christians do)! Don't deprive yourself of the joy, blessings, and fulfillment, as well as the eternal treasures that an intimate and obedient walk with God will bring. The rest of this chapter is devoted to explaining how to do this.

As you continue, please keep in mind that God will never force you to do anything. He does not force us to accept salvation, nor does He force us to obey. Every choice we make is ultimately our own.

1. RECOGNIZE AND ACCEPT TRUTHS.

In order to live the way God wants us to, we must first recognize and accept several truths.

1-a. We are in a loving personal relationship with God. It is a wonderful, intimate Father and child relationship--a friendship!

The Spirit himself testifies with our spirit that we are God's children. Romans 8:16

Greater love has no one than this, that he lay down his life for his friends. John 15:13

There is nothing complicated about it, nor is it difficult to come to Him. There are no ceremonies to perform, no sacrifices to offer (other than in our attitudes), no mental or cosmic states to achieve, and there is no one whom we must go through. We talk directly to God the Father--in Jesus' name--any time we want.

For there is one God and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus, 1 Timothy 2:5

Our relationship is simple, personal, loving, and is to remain this way.

1-b. Our relationship with God, His love, and our promise of eternity in heaven cannot be lost, stolen, nor taken away.

I give them eternal life, and they shall never perish; no one can snatch them out of my hand. John 10:28

For I am convinced that neither death nor life, neither angels nor demons, neither the present nor the future, nor any powers, neither height nor depth, nor anything else in all creation, will be able to separate us from the love of God that is in Christ Jesus our Lord. Romans 8:38,39

In my Father's house are many rooms; if it were not so, I would have told you. I am going there to prepare a place for you. John 14:2

Salvation, remember, is not the result of anything we have accomplished. It is not something we have earned.

... he saved us, not because of righteous things we had done, but because of His mercy. Titus 3:5

For it is by grace you have been saved, through faith—and this not from yourselves, it is the gift of God—not by works, so that no one can boast. Ephesians 2:8,9

Neither is it something which we can “un-earn.” We cannot lose our salvation! We cannot commit a sin so terrible after accepting Jesus as to be rejected by Him for it. He will mercifully, tenderly, and totally forgive us for any sins we have committed the moment we truly repent and ask Him to do so. God has even forgiven His children for sins as horrible as adultery and murder

[See the story of King David] *2 Samuel, Chapters 11 and 12*

and for fearfully denying that they even knew Him.

[See the story of Peter's denial] *Matthew 26:69-75*

... if we are faithless, he will remain faithful, for he cannot disown himself. 2 Timothy 2:13

If our repentance for a sin is not sincere, then even that in itself is not enough to keep us out of heaven. It might get us there early. If a Christian remaining on earth is going to result in more eternal

damage than eternal good, that person might find himself home sooner than necessary.

[See the story of Ananias and Sapphira] Acts 5:1-11

There is, however, a very grave danger in non-repentance--in not being sorry for our sins and not being willing to change. If a Christian decides to walk deeper and deeper into sin and is not called home (for perhaps God must leave him here for the eternal benefit of someone else), he may ultimately decide that he no longer wants Jesus to be his Lord. Sin has the very horrible effect of turning our hearts away from God--away from desiring, trusting, and obeying Him. But this is the only way it could ever happen--the only way a person could ever become "un-saved." He would have to knowingly and willingly do it.

Here is a trustworthy saying: If we died with him, we will also live with him; if we endure, we will also reign with him. If we disown him, he will also disown us; if we are faithless, he will remain faithful, for he cannot disown himself. 2 Timothy 2:11-13

See to it, brothers, that none of you has a sinful, unbelieving heart that turns away from the living God. But encourage one another daily, as long as it is called Today, so that none of you may be hardened by sin's deceitfulness. We have come to share in Christ if we hold firmly till the end the confidence we had at first. Hebrews 3:12-14

Therefore, dear friends, since you already know this, be on your guard so that you may not be carried away by the error of lawless men and fall from your secure position. 2 Peter 3:17

My brothers, if one of you should wander from the truth and someone should bring him back, remember this: Whoever turns a sinner from the error of his way will save him from death and cover over a multitude of sins. James 5:19

Remain in me, and I will remain in you. No branch can bear fruit by itself; it must remain in the vine. Neither can you bear fruit unless you remain in me. I am the vine; you are the branches. If a man remains in me and I in him, he will bear much fruit; apart from me you can do nothing. If anyone does not remain in me, he is like a branch that is thrown away and withers; such branches are picked up, thrown into the fire and burned. John 15:4-6

For a person to dispossess himself of his salvation, he would have to make a conscious, willful decision to reject Jesus as Lord and Savior, after having made a conscious, willful decision to accept Him as Lord and Savior. Notice that the breaking off of the relationship is something that the Christian would have to do, it is not something that God would do.

If you're like me, you cannot understand how a person could ever do this (give back his salvation). I believe it would take as much of a decision to re-reject Jesus as it would to climb back into a burning room after having just escaped. Perhaps people just stand at the window so long looking at what they left behind, they forget how much better it is where they are going. If you have already accepted salvation (you have escaped through the window), keep going and don't look back. If you ever make the decision to reject Jesus again, He will not call you a second time.

It is impossible for those who have once been enlightened, who have tasted the heavenly gift, who have shared in the Holy Spirit, who have tasted the goodness of the word of God and the powers of the coming age, if they fall away, to be brought back to repentance, . . . Hebrews 6:4-6

If you are deeply concerned that you may have done this (the one and only time which it is possible), you haven't. If you had, you wouldn't have gotten this far into this book and you wouldn't be deeply concerned. You probably wouldn't even care (yet).

1-c. God will never leave us, nor forsake us. The third truth that we must accept is that God will never leave us--neither permanently nor temporarily. When we accept Jesus, the Holy Spirit comes to live within us (residing with our eternal spirit inside our physical bodies) where He will remain until the moment He takes us home. We will never find ourselves anywhere, at any time, under any circumstances, facing life alone. If we are sinning, we may feel as if we are alone, as God may refuse to answer our prayers; but our relationship is based upon truth, not emotion.

And I will ask the Father, and he will give you another Counselor to be with you forever— the Spirit of truth. The world cannot accept him, because it neither sees him nor knows him. But you know him, for he lives with you and will be in you. John 14:16,17

... God has said, "Never will I leave you; never will I forsake you." Hebrews 13:5

1-d. With God's help, we can live righteously and achieve every goal He has for our lives. By our own abilities we cannot do this, but in God's strength we can. By calling upon Him continually for faith, courage, strength, knowledge, understanding, wisdom, discernment, and the desire to know and do His will, we can handle every situation that comes our way and accomplish everything that He has planned for us to do. There is no problem, heartache, temptation, addiction, or enemy that can stop us when we face it in God's power. What we must always remember is that it is God's power. We must get it from Him (by asking), and He will provide it as we need it. Remember, He is not going to provide us with everything we need the moment we accept Him. He wants a relationship with us, and He wants us calling upon Him continually.

I can do everything through him who gives me strength. Philippians 4:13

But now that you have been set free from sin and have become slaves to God, the benefit you reap leads to holiness, and the result is eternal life. Romans 6:22

I write to you, young men, because you have overcome the evil one. 1 John 2:13

1-e. We can immediately and completely be forgiven for any sins which we commit. If and when we do sin, we truly repent and ask God to forgive us, He will immediately and completely do so. It will be, in His eyes, as if we had not sinned at all.

My dear children, I write this to you so that you will not sin. But if anybody does sin, we have one who speaks to the Father in our defense—Jesus Christ, the Righteous One. 1 John 2:1

If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just and will forgive us our sins and purify us from all unrighteousness. 1 John 1:9

1-f. God has promised to cause everything in our lives to work together for our good. We have the unshakable, unbreakable promise of the Architect & Creator of the universe (with His infinite knowledge, wisdom, and power to back it up) that He will cause everything in our lives to work together for our eternal benefit. This means everything, whether joyful, sad, big, little, hard, or easy. He has not promised us that everything will be good (in this life), as we live in a sinful, messed-up world, and there may be things which He allows which we may not understand until we get to heaven, but we have this promise. This can give meaning and significance to every event in our lives, no matter how small or how painful.

And we know that in all things God works for the good of those who love him, who have been called

according to his purpose. Romans 8:28

1-g. We are very important to God and to His eternal plan, and He has a very specific role for us to fulfill.

For we are God's workmanship, created in Christ Jesus to do good works, which God prepared in advance for us to do. Ephesians 2:10

There is no one in all of Christendom who is more important than we are if we are fulfilling our role. This is true regardless of our appearance, education, financial standing, talents, abilities,

But the LORD said to Samuel, "Do not consider his appearance or his height, for I have rejected him. The LORD does not look at the things man looks at. Man looks at the outward appearance, but the LORD looks at the heart. 1 Samuel 16.7

or our disabilities. God may sometimes allow a disability (or refrain from healing one) in order to bring more people into His kingdom.

Three times I pleaded with the Lord to take it away from me. But he said to me, "My grace is sufficient for you, for my power is made perfect in weakness" Therefore I will boast all the more gladly about my weaknesses, so that Christ's power may rest on me. That is why, for Christ's sake, I delight in weaknesses, in insults, in hardships, in persecutions, in difficulties. For when I am weak, then I am strong. 2 Corinthians 12:8-10

Joni Eareckson Tada is a lady who is greatly used by God to help people around the world. She is the author of two best selling books and heads up a Christian ministry known as "Joni and Friends." She and her ministry are a blessing to untold numbers of people and are a special blessing to people with disabilities (as well as to their families). God is able to use her in a significant way, as Joni is a quadriplegic herself. She was injured many years ago in a diving accident. No one but God knows how many lives have been blessed through this lady or how many more people will be in heaven. (She is also gifted at painting, which she does by holding the brush with her mouth).

There are going to be many surprises in heaven, one of them being that some of the people who assumed the lowest positions in this life will assume the highest positions throughout eternity, and vice versa.

But many who are first will be last, and many who are last will be first. Matthew 19:30

In order to find and fulfill God's wonderful plan, we must continually seek His guidance, study His Word, and be willing to always obey (quickly and completely). As we do, what we discover is that we are being sovereignly guided through the master plan, even before we know where we are headed. It's like being on a trip with God navigating: He doesn't tell us to drive to a particular town, He tells us to turn right at the next corner. If we refrain from obeying until we know where we are headed, we will never get to the desired location.

We also need to ignore what the world says is important. As one preacher put it, "If God has called you to preach, do not stoop to being king." Now, please understand that being king (general, professor, boss, or anything else) is not stooping if God has called you to do it. If He hasn't, if you are assuming some role which God has not called you to perform, then you are not accomplishing the eternal goals which He has ordained for your life, and you are stooping. You are choosing temporary importance over eternal. The same thing is true regarding mothers: If God has called you to stay at home and raise children for Him, do not stoop to having a career. Do not underestimate God's ability to affect eternity through a mother raising her children for Him. How different would eternity be if Billy Graham's mother had not fulfilled her role?

1-h. We are no longer citizens of this world. We have been called out and we are now citizens of another (higher) kingdom.

Dear friends, I urge you, as aliens and strangers in the world, to abstain from sinful desires, which war against your soul. 1 Peter 2:11

This world is no longer our home. We are not to love it, desire it, nor intensely strive for the things which it offers.

Do not love the world or anything in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him. For everything in the world—the cravings of sinful man, the lust of his eyes and the boasting of what he has and does—comes not from the Father, but from the world. 1 John 2:15

It's OK to enjoy what the Lord gives us here. He even promises us these blessings if we will make Him and His will top priority in our lives

But seek first his kingdom and his righteousness, and all these things will be given to you as well. Matthew 6:33

and, of course, we are supposed to work hard to provide for our needs and for the needs of our families. The temporary and vulnerable treasures of this world are just not to be our heart's desire.

Do not store up for yourselves treasures on earth, where moth and rust destroy, and where thieves break in and steal. But store up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where moth and rust do not destroy, and where thieves do not break in and steal. For where your treasure is, there your heart will be also. Matthew 6:19-21

It's helpful to remember that we don't own anything anyway. Everything we have belongs to God who created it all. We are simply stewards of resources which He has put under our control, and we're not taking any of it with us.

The earth is the LORD'S, and everything in it, the world and all who live in it; . . . Psalm 24:1

1-i. We are no longer Satan's victims; we are his enemies. The final truth we need to understand in order to live the way God wants us to live is that we are no longer Satan's victims; we are his enemies. I can't tell you all that this means for any particular person. For some, it may mean an increased attack by the enemy, for others it may mean a decrease (although I doubt it). You see, when we accept Jesus, we become the aggressors in this war. At least we are supposed to be. After we accept salvation, we still find ourselves here in Satan's domain,

We know that we are children of God, and that the whole world is under the control of the evil one. 1 John 5:19

and it becomes our job to take as many people away from him--by leading them to Jesus--as we possibly can.

Go into all the world and preach the good news to all creation. Whoever believes and is baptized will be saved, but whoever does not believe will be condemned. Mark 16:15,16

It is actually God who accomplishes this task, but we are His tools and His weapons. It is now our job, our opportunity, our privilege to attack Satan's kingdom. We have God's authority over Satan and his demons,

However, do not rejoice that the spirits submit to you, but rejoice that your names are written in heaven.

Luke 10:20

And these signs will accompany those who believe: In my name they will drive out demons; . . . Mark 16:17

and if we live in obedience to the Lord and resist demonic temptations, we will win the battles.

Submit yourselves, then, to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you. James 4:7

At the end of this chapter, you are going to learn some of the specifics about fighting the enemy.

2. LEARN TO COMMUNICATE WITH GOD.

After accepting the Lord and the truths which this relationship is built upon, the next step we need to take is to learn how to communicate with Him--both how to speak, and how to listen. Communication is not something that just happens. It is a process which must be developed. As any husband or wife with a successful marriage can tell you, if you are going to have a happy and meaningful relationship, you must learn to communicate. We must be open and honest with each other, willing to teach and to learn about each other, and willing to spend the time and effort required to develop the communication process.

God has already taken the first and greatest steps toward this development. He has given us the Bible--His divinely inspired and divinely controlled Word--

All scripture is God-breathed and is useful for teaching, rebuking, correcting and training in righteousness, . . . 2 Timothy 3:16

not only to teach us all about Himself and about this wonderful relationship we are in but also to bridge the communication gap. Through His Word, He not only teaches us how to talk to Him (how we are to pray), He will often speak to us--sovereignly moving us through the scriptures and making us aware of whatever He wants to say. The Bible is not just a book! It is not to be read once, then placed upon a shelf. It is to be read continually throughout our lives. Christians who don't read the Bible have greatly shut the door to most of what God wants to tell them.

A helpful hint. *** Get a Bible which you can understand (and one with large enough print to comfortably read). If the only Bible you have is written in old English, you may want to consider a newer translation. There are several available, and many of them have very good study helps included -- like introductions to each book, topical study guides, concordances, etc. My personal favorite is the 'New International Version 1984,' which I have used throughout this book. Go to a Christian book store (on-line or in person) and look at the different translations and features, but be sure to ask God to guide your search. You can also get the Bible on your phone, tablet or computer, which makes finding particular verses, phrases, words, or combinations of words fast and easy.

Warning. *** All true Bibles agree with each other on all important points--even if they are worded differently--

And we know that in all things God works for the good of those who love him, who have been called according to his purpose. Romans 8:28 New International Version

And we know that all things work together for good to those who love God, to those who have been called according to his purpose. Romans 8:28 New King James Version

And we know that God causes all things to work together for good to those who love God, to those who are called according to His purpose. Romans 8:28 New American Standard

but not all Bibles are true Bibles. Don't ever buy one from a person or organization which offers only one translation. Chances are, theirs disagrees with the rest. Be cautious also of Bibles with commentaries. There are some with very good commentaries, and there are some with very bad commentaries. Whether good or bad though, always remember: the Bible is from God; the commentaries are from man.

2-a. Learn How To Talk To God

Without delving too deeply into the communication process, I would like to briefly cover the major aspects of it. In regard to talking to God, the Bible tells us how we are to come to Him as well as the reasons we should. We are to pray honestly, being open and truthful with God, and in faith, believing that He can and will help us. We are to pray in Jesus' name, recognizing that it is through Jesus that we are able to come to the Father, and according to His will, understanding that He is not going to answer any prayers which are not eternally beneficial. We are to pray sincerely, truly meaning what we say, and persistently, not giving up if He doesn't answer according to our schedule. We are to pray humbly and reverently, recognizing that we are talking to the Creator and Ruler of the universe, and simply, remembering that this is a Father and child relationship. We are also to come to Him obediently, being ready to obey His commands, and repentantly, being truly sorry for the times we haven't.

As for the reasons for coming to Him: We are to praise Him for His perfect holiness; His infinite love, knowledge, wisdom, and power; and for His sovereign control over the universe. (This is great for boosting faith.) We are to thank Him for giving us life, dying for our sins, making us His children, providing for our needs, giving us power over sin and authority over Satan, and for the promise of eternal life in heaven, etc. We are also to confess our sins, ask for forgiveness, pray for the needs of others, and finally, ask for the things that we need and want.

If this seems pretty one-sided, that prayer seems to be mostly for God's benefit, remember, He is God: Creator, Sustainer, and Ruler of all creation! He is to be honored! Be aware also that there is no way for a Christian to honor God without benefiting personally. Praising and honoring God helps us to keep our eyes upon Him (the solution) rather than on ourselves, Satan, or on the world around us (the problems). It also reminds us of just how big He is. There is no problem, enemy, heartache, or concern that is too big for our Father to handle. Correct praying helps us to attain many of the blessings which He offers.

2-b. Learn How To Listen To God

In regard to the other side of the communication process--listening to God--His Word also gives us guidelines to follow and tells us what He hopes to accomplish by speaking. In addition to simply wanting to spend time with us and wanting to comfort and assure us with His presence, He also wants to guide us through this life. Again, He has a very specific plan for our lives and it is to be accomplished through our daily decisions. It's sad to think of the number of Christians who live their

entire lives without ever finding out what God created them to do. Not only do they go into eternity never truly having found fulfillment in this life, they severely limit the eternal effect which they were supposed to have had.

Now, the reason that God gives us directions on how to listen to Him is so that we can hear Him. God is always speaking. The problem is, we're not always listening.

For God does speak—now one way, now another—though man may not perceive it. Job 33:14

In learning how to listen to God, we must first learn to recognize His voice. When attempting to communicate, there are a number of methods which He may use.

The first way God speaks is through the Bible: His written Word--divinely inspired, divinely accurate, divinely used. It is the method He uses most often and the means by which we must verify all messages to see if they are truly from Him. God will never tell us anything that disagrees with what He has already said. **If it disagrees with the Bible, it's not from God!!!**

A second way God speaks is directly: The Holy Spirit simply tells us something Himself.

When you are brought before synagogues, rulers and authorities, do not worry about how you will defend yourselves or what you will say, for the Holy Spirit will teach you at that time what you should say. Luke 12:11-12

He may communicate with us through a dream,

Then God came to Laban the Aramean in a dream at night and said to him, "Be careful not to say anything to Jacob, either good or bad." Genesis 31:24

or a vision,

The Lord called to him in a vision, "Ananias!" "Yes, Lord," he answered. The Lord told him, "Go to the house of Judas on Straight Street and ask for a man from Tarsus named Saul, for he is praying. . . . "Lord," Ananias answered, "I have heard many reports about this man and all the harm he has done to your saints in Jerusalem." . . . But the Lord said to Ananias, "Go!" Acts 9:10,11,13,15

or by simply impressing upon us whatever knowledge He wants to convey. This knowledge may be imparted without words (i.e., we suddenly realize that we know God's will), or may be conveyed in the form of a sentence, which most likely will not be physically audible. This is the same as when we communicate with Him in silent prayer.

One day, I devoted my lunch hour to fasting and praying for a particular candidate who was running for political office. His opponent was a very godless individual. While praying, the Lord said to me, "As it grows darker, a light appears brighter." This told me that the candidate that I was praying for was not going to be elected, but, that as our country plummets deeper and deeper into sin, righteousness would stand out more. I have since asked the Lord to not only let us (Christians) appear brighter but to help us to grow brighter!"

While they were worshiping the Lord and fasting, the Holy Spirit said, "Set apart for me Barnabas and Saul for the work to which I have called them." Acts 13:2

In seeking to understand how God communicates with us through non-audible speech, we first need to understand the definition of sound. Sound is the interpretation (by the brain) of physical vibrations within the ear. These vibrations are caused by rapid variations in air pressure resulting from something occurring outside the ear. The Holy Spirit--who is not physical and who resides with our

spirit inside our physical bodies--does not have to resort to vibrating the air outside of our ears in order to communicate.

And I will ask the Father, and he will give you another Counselor to be with you forever— the Spirit of truth. The world cannot accept him, because it neither sees him nor knows him. But you know him, for he lives with you and will be in you. John 14:16,17

He can simply speak to us, Spirit to spirit, all on the inside. The Holy Spirit communicating with one of His children audibly is about as logical as two people sitting on a couch together communicating through cellular telephones. It's also important to understand that God, who created time and is not limited by it, does not need time to speak. In my own experience when God has communicated in this way, there was no time involved. One moment He had not spoken, the next He had. (He also moved my car at one time--to keep me from hitting a guard rail--with no time involved.)

Then they were willing to take him into the boat, and immediately the boat reached the shore where they were heading. John 6:21

In regard to God speaking directly, or in any other way, there is something which is extremely important to understand. **The importance of knowing the Bible cannot be over emphasized!** Satan seems to use this direct form of communication (i.e. subliminal thoughts, dreams, and visions) as much, if not more, than God.

Satan rose up against Israel and incited David to take a census of Israel. 1 Chronicles 21:1

When I think my bed will comfort me and my couch will ease my complaint, even then you frighten me with dreams and terrify me with visions, . . . Job 7:13,14

[Job was speaking to God, not realizing that Satan was responsible for his trouble]

Any time you think you have received a message from God, whether it comes through a dream, a vision, a friend, or even the preacher of your church, compare it with the Bible. If it disagrees, it's not from God!

A third way God speaks is through godly counsel--through other Christians who know and obey His word. This could be anybody from the preacher of your church to the person who lives next door. On extremely important issues, it is advisable (if possible) to seek guidance from a number of obedient Christians: from a group of people who can humbly pray together and be used by God to give us guidance.

Caution *** If someone, without being asked, brings you "a message from God," don't believe it unless God verifies it in some way, or unless it is a verification of something He has already been telling you. Remember, God can speak to you directly; He doesn't have to go through some other individual.

A fourth way God speaks / guides is through circumstances. He will control a situation to cause us to think or to move according to His will. He may cause us to feel restless if we are out of His will,

That night the king could not sleep; so he ordered the book of the chronicles, the record of his reign, to be brought in and read to him. Esther 6:1

(This combination of events was sovereignly brought about by God in order to protect the Jewish race

from extermination.)

at peace when we are within it,

Do not be anxious about anything, but in everything, by prayer and petition, with thanksgiving, present your requests to God. And the peace of God, which transcends all understanding, will guard your hearts and your minds in Christ Jesus. Philippians 4:6,7

or just simply comforted when we need a hug.

Praise be to the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of compassion and the God of all comfort, who comforts us in all our troubles, so that we can comfort those in any trouble with the comfort we ourselves have received from God. 2 Corinthians 1:3,4

He may (symbolically) open or close doors (for example, a job opportunity or job loss),

For if you remain silent at this time, relief and deliverance for the Jews will arise from another place, but you and your father's family will perish. And who knows but that you have come to royal position for such a time as this? Esther 4:14

affect us physically (make us stronger if He wants us to complete a job or weaker if He doesn't); answer or not answer our prayers, place people or objects of significance along our path, and so on.

Meanwhile, the people in Judah said, "The strength of the laborers is giving out, and there is so much rubble that we cannot rebuild the wall. . . . So the wall was completed on the twenty-fifth of Elul, in fifty-two days. When all our enemies heard about this, all the surrounding nations were afraid and lost their self-confidence, because they realized that this work had been done with the help of our God. Nehemiah 4:10, 6:15-16

I, by the power of God, and with much help from family and friends, physically built our house. Later, as a result of hail damage, I began to re-shingle the roof. There was no doubt that God had guided me to begin the re-roofing job, as He had sovereignly directed me to a tool for removing shingles which I did not know existed. I walked into an extremely large hardware store, turned a corner and walked straight to it. He also allowed a person whom I knew to tell me that removing shingles was easy. (Wrong!) Shortly after beginning the job, He withdrew all support. I ran out of stamina, felt totally overwhelmed, and began getting blisters on my feet (none of which had happened while building the house). Things also began getting damaged, and the weather was turning bad. I ended up having to hire a roofing company to complete the job. As a result of starting, then quitting this job, God was able to use my wife and me to save three migrant workers whom I had hired to help me remove the shingles. (***) I asked God to stop me if it was not O.K. for me to quit and hire the roofing company, and He did not stand in my way.)

Needless to say, the possibilities here are endless. What's important to remember is that no matter what He has to say, it will never contradict what He has already said in the Bible, and no matter what His effect upon our lives, it will be used for our eternal benefit.

Once we begin to recognize God's voice, our responsibilities for listening are far from over. Aside from the fact that we can hear someone speak without truly listening, God expects certain things from us when He does speak. If this, again, sounds pretty one-sided--like the communication process is all for God's benefit--there are a couple of things we need to remember. First, when we pray, we have God's complete attention. When we pray, Almighty God--who keeps the world turning and the stars in place--listens to every word we say. Second, God wants us to listen to Him for our benefit. Everything He tells us will benefit us eternally if we listen and obey, and most things will bless us now.

When God speaks, we are to listen actively--deliberately seeking to hear Him; expectantly--believing that He is here to guide us; and openly--being willing to accept whatever He says, whether comforting, convicting, or commanding. We are to listen reverently--showing Him the utmost respect;

and gratefully--being thankful for His guidance and for all that He has given, promised, and done for us. We are to listen submissively--willing to obey all that He has already told us as well as what He is about to; and dependently--recognizing that it is He who supplies all our needs. We are to listen carefully--paying close attention to what He says, and patiently--willing to wait upon His timing, not rushing off ahead of His plan. Finally, we are to be still and listen quietly--stepping out of the rush and noise of our daily lives to give Him the time and attention required to truly hear.

Be still, and know that I am God; . . . Psalm 46:10

(Satan loves our lives to be louder and faster. He knows that God usually doesn't scream over the noise and that stopping someone who is moving too fast usually hurts.)

[For a much more thorough discussion on how to listen to God, I highly recommend a wonderful little book entitled How to Listen to God by Dr. Charles Stanley — Published by Oliver-Nelson * A division of Thomas Nelson Publishers * Nashville * Atlanta * Camden * New York]

3. GO TO GOD FOR COMFORT AND HEALING.

After accepting the Lord and the truths of this relationship, and after opening the lines of communication, the next opportunity and responsibility we have is to go to Him for comfort and healing. Most people need this, as we live in a sick, painful, and messed-up world, and yes, I did say "responsibility!" We have a responsibility to go to God for help! He wants to comfort us, to heal us, to fix our lives, and then to use us to do the same for others.

Praise be to the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of compassion and the God of all comfort, who comforts us in all our troubles, so that we can comfort those in any trouble with the comfort we ourselves have received from God. 2 Corinthians 1:3-4

I am speaking here of emotional healing as opposed to physical, but be assured, we cannot put limits on what God may do. If it will be to His glory and our eternal benefit, God is certainly willing and able to heal any physical problems we have.

And these signs will accompany those who believe: In my name they will drive out demons; . . . they will place their hands on sick people and they will get well. Mark 16:17,18

Is any one of you sick? He should call the elders of the church to pray over him and anoint him with oil in the name of the Lord. And the prayer offered in faith will make the sick person well; the Lord will raise him up. James 5:14-15

I had, at one time, injured my leg while working-out in karate. After sustaining this injury (which was apparently permanent), I was unable to stretch again adequately. Approximately 21 months later, I met a 'proclaimed Christian'--who had just married one of my karate students--who insulted me terribly. Two days after our initial meeting, while preparing for my next karate class and preparing to meet this man again, I was both stretching and praying. I stretched my injured leg and, as over the previous 21 months, it was extremely tight and limited in range of motion. I then stopped and asked God to help me forgive this man (my brother in Christ) and to honor Him (our Father). Upon finishing this prayer, I went to stretch again, and my leg was completely healed. — Forgiveness came much easier than expected. (In response to our prayers, the Lord has healed me and the members of my family on several, although not all, occasions.)

So go to Him. Take Him your heartaches and pain, your problems, fears, and concerns. Ask

Him for help, then be willing to accept it--whether it comes directly from Him, through His Word, or through people He sends your way. You can trust Him with your life, He won't mess it up. Just accept what He says as truth and obey what He tells you to do, and you will give Him the freedom to start healing you, your family, and your life. He can take any situation, no matter how bad it is, and if the people involved are willing to repent, trust, and obey, He can turn it around. He can give us the power to forgive (even ourselves), "fall" back in love, change our behavior, break an addiction, change our perspective, or handle whatever our troubles happen to be. There are no problems too big, too small, or too numerous for God. (If there are other people involved in your situation who are not willing to cooperate and turn to God, then that is even more of a reason for you to draw close to Him.)

May your unfailing love be my comfort, according to your promise to your servant. Psalm 119:76

4. TRUST AND OBEY GOD IN EVERYTHING.

This "trusting and obeying God" is what we need to do in regard to every other aspect of our lives also. We need to make a one time, unconditional, non-retractable decision to walk in obedience to God (which we learn to do by reading the Bible), and trust Him with our lives. We also need to reaffirm it daily. No, we won't be perfect; we will have our failures. If we don't make this decision, though, we will never even come close. We need to yield to God--to filter through His approval--every aspect of our lives: our jobs, recreation, entertainment, relationships, thoughts, goals, desires, decisions, attitudes, and speech (what we say and how we say it). God says we are to live holy and righteous lives--loving and honoring Him and loving our fellow man. We are to be kind, compassionate, and forgiving (as He is forgiving of us). We are to be honest, hard-working, law abiding citizens (up to the point where obeying man's laws requires us to break God's), and are to stand up for what is right. We are to stand by our promises, especially in our families, and are to continually give thanks to God "in" (not necessarily "for") every situation.

Be joyful always; pray continually; give thanks in all circumstances, for this is God's will for you in Christ Jesus. 1 Thessalonians 5:16-18

We are to rid our lives of everything which is displeasing to God and, thus, bad for us: namely, all idolatry (loving ourselves or anything else more than we love God), lying, deceiving, stealing, cheating, bitterness, rage, unrighteous anger, drunkenness, brawling, gossip, slander, malice, jealousy, profanity, obscenity, sexual immorality, impurity, lust, and greed.

If this requires some major changes in your life, for example, changing or eliminating most of your media input (TV, radio, the Internet, video games, books, magazines, movies, etc.), so be it! We must understand that practically every sin we have ever committed started as a thought. Therefore, the way we resist sin is to stop it where it starts--at the thought level.

We demolish arguments and every pretension that sets itself up against the knowledge of God, and we take captive every thought to make it obedient to Christ. 2 Corinthians 10.5

We need to be as particular about what we put into our minds as we are about what we put into our mouths. (A very wise parent once said: "We don't let our kids watch network television for the same reason we don't let them drink out of the toilet.") We also need to remember that the thought level is where Satan does most of his attacking. He seeks to fill our minds with sinful thoughts, hoping that they will ultimately turn into desires which we will act upon. A question we all need to ask is: "Does the enemy have to work extremely hard at my house, or are most of Satan's goals for my family being

attained through the media?”

Before continuing, please remember why we should want to obey God. We do not serve some giant, oppressive, rule-setting dictator, who sits around all day trying to keep us from having fun. He is a very wonderful Heavenly Father, who loves us immensely, died to make us His children, and wants to care for us throughout eternity. His rules are always for our benefit! He is the One who created the gift of male and female intimacy, yet people despise Him for telling them how to conduct themselves. (If people reacted this way with new cars, the auto manufacturers could be in danger every time they provided someone with an owner's manual.) So once again, if you truly want all the joy, blessings, fulfillment, and eternal rewards that this life has to offer, then get just as close to God as you possibly can and obey what He says.

Let me also add that it is exciting. It is utterly magnificent to watch the Wisdom and Power that created the universe at work in your own life and in the lives of the people around you. It's also fun watching Him beat Satan at every turn. Satan will tell you exactly the opposite--that being a Christian is boring--while at the same time, leading you down a road of misery and destruction. (I actually know of a person who has attempted suicide on more than one occasion but will not become a Christian because “she will have to give up her fun.”)

Before leaving the subject of obedience, there are two additional commands God has given us which I would like to address. The first is **Water Baptism**. If you have now accepted Jesus as your Lord and Savior, if you are now “born-again,” then you need to be baptized. You need to find a God-fearing (revering), Bible-believing church and tell them you want to be baptized. Being baptized is being symbolically buried and resurrected in water. It is representative of Jesus' burial (death) and resurrection, of our dying to our old life and being resurrected to a new one, and of having our sins washed away.

Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. Matthew 28:19,20

A baptismal ceremony is performed in the following manner. Another Christian will assist you by standing to your side, supporting your back and head with one arm while holding your wrists with the opposite hand. Your hands are clasped together in front of your chin or in front of your nose--if you want to clamp it shut because of the water. This position allows the Christian doing the baptizing to control your body weight. The other Christian will say something along the lines of, “Because you have now accepted Jesus Christ as your personal Lord and Savior, I now baptize you in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit.” You will then be tilted backward until submerged--imitating burial--and then immediately lifted back out of the water--imitating resurrection. The baptism may be performed from either a sitting or a standing position.

The second command which I would like to address is **Tithing**. God commanded in the Old Testament that His people give back to Him--to help His other children and to support the work of His kingdom--the first ten percent of everything which He gave to them. (A tithe is one-tenth.)

He ordered the people living in Jerusalem to give the portion due the priests and Levites so they could devote themselves to the Law of the Lord. As soon as the order went out, the Israelites generously gave the firstfruits of their grain, new wine, oil and honey and all that the fields produced. They brought a great amount, a tithe of everything. 2 Chronicles 31:4,5

This included their income, interest, inheritance--anything which they received of financial value. Living today--after God paid for our sins, having His entire written Word in convenient book form, and having free and instantaneous access to Him at any time--we should be joyously giving as much or

more than they were commanded to give. We should be joyfully supporting the work of the church and the salaries of the workers.

Now about the collection for God's people: Do what I told the Galatian churches to do. On the first day of every week, each one of you should set aside a sum of money in keeping with his income, . . . 1 Corinthians 16:1,2

As you go, preach this message: 'The kingdom of heaven is near.' . . . Do not take along any gold or silver or copper in your belts; take no bag for the journey, or extra tunic, or sandals or a staff; for the worker is worth his keep. Matthew 10:7,9-10

Remember this: Whoever sows sparingly will also reap sparingly, and whoever sows generously will also reap generously. Each man should give what he has decided in his heart to give, not reluctantly or under compulsion, for God loves a cheerful giver. 2 Corinthians 9:6,7

Now, in regard to “giving to God,” there is a certain truth we should understand: Almighty God—creator and owner of Heaven and Earth—does not need our money (although He does use it.)

If I were hungry I would not tell you, for the world is mine, and all that is in it. Psalm 50:12

He can do everything He is going to do, with or without our financial support. You see, money is not the issue; God wants our hearts. He knows that where we put our money is where we put our hearts, and He wants that to be with Him.

For where your treasure is, there your heart will be also. Matthew 6:21

Our tithing, in yet another way, allows Him to prove His sovereignty, power, and love, and therefore to further capture our hearts. He has promised that if we will give Him the first part of everything we receive, thus, trusting Him to make everything work out in the end, our lives will absolutely overflow with His blessings.

“Bring the whole tithe into the storehouse, that there may be food in my house. Test me in this,” says the LORD Almighty, “and see if I will not through open the floodgates of heaven and pour out so much blessing that you will not have room enough for it.” Malachi 3:10

These blessings may not come in the form of finances, other than the fact that He does promise to take care of all our physical needs. Quite often they come as the more important things in life, the things money can't buy: love, joy, peace, and the comfort of knowing we have entrusted our future well being to One who is more assured than the existence of this planet.

Heaven and earth will pass away, but my words will never pass away. Matthew 24:35

Before starting to tithe, though, you should be aware of two things. First, giving to charities and organizations which are not involved in leading people to salvation or in specifically helping those who have already accepted it is wonderful, but this does not fit the criteria of “giving to God's work” (i.e., it may be eternally useless). As a friend of mine once put it: “If you send a bunch of well-fed, highly-educated people to hell, what good have you done?” Second, we are not to just blindly give to anyone who comes along claiming to be a servant of God. We have a responsibility to see that God's money is going to organizations which are not only Biblically correct in their efforts and teaching, they must also be using the money wisely.

5. FINAL SUGGESTIONS

Well, if you have done everything that has been suggested--you have accepted Jesus and the truths of this relationship; you have accepted your responsibilities for the development of the communication process; you have decided to rely upon Him for comfort and healing; and you have decided to make trust and obedience the pattern of your life — **Congratulations! You are one of the wisest people who has ever lived!**

The fear of the LORD is the beginning of wisdom; all who follow his precepts have good understanding. Psalm 111:10

For wide is the gate and broad is the road that leads to destruction, and many enter through it. But small is the gate and narrow the road that leads to life, and only a few find it. Matthew 7:13,14

You have just taken the greatest steps you will ever take toward a better future. Isn't it amazing that people will spend sixteen or more years in school to provide for a better earthly future, but will do little or nothing to provide for a better eternal future?

It will be revealed with fire, and the fire will test the quality of each man's work. If what he has built survives, he will receive his reward. If it is burned up, he will suffer loss; he himself will be saved, but only as one escaping through the flames. 1 Corinthians 3:13-15

Remember also that if you like having authority, then you should be even more inspired to serve God now. The more faithful we are with the authority He has given us in this life, the more we will have in the next.

"His master replied, 'Well done, good and faithful servant! You have been faithful with a few things; I will put you in charge of many things. Come and share your master's happiness!' Matthew 25:23

[A note on fairness of reward: If God does not call a person to salvation until they are ninety--if they are not presented with this offer until their life here is almost over--they can still be as highly blessed throughout eternity as the person who is called at age nine. God will reward two people equally, regardless of the time spent serving Him, if from the moment He first calls them, they both accept and spend the rest of their earthly lives serving Him to the best of their ability.]

(See the parable of "the workers and the vineyard.") *Matthew 20:1-16*

So again, if you have made these decisions, congratulations! May your walk with God be wonderful, and may your life--now and throughout eternity--be filled with His joy. May your love for Him grow forevermore, and may you truly enjoy Him for all that He is. Here are some final suggestions to help you along the way.

5-a. Remember Always This Eternal Truth:

Almighty God loves us so much that He willingly accepted humiliation, torture, and physical death to make us His children, in order to love and care for us for all of eternity. (Are we safe to say that none of us has ever shown such love for our children?) This same God is not now seeking our misfortune or unhappiness. We need to filter everything in our lives--everything He does, requires, or allows--through this basic immutable truth. We need to write this on our memories, on our lives, and on the walls of our houses. Don't ever say to yourself, "I'm sorry God forbids this;" say instead, "I'm sorry this is bad for me."

"For I know the plans I have for you," declares the LORD, "plans to prosper you and not to harm you, plans to give you hope and a future." Jeremiah 29:11

5-b. Join a Church:

Go find a God reverencing, Bible believing, Bible teaching, obedient group of Christians—who love, serve, and obey the Lord, and who aren't afraid to call sin "sin"—and join the group! (Don't expect to find perfect Christians: You're not there yet and neither are the rest of us.)

Let us not give up meeting together, as some are in the habit of doing, but let us encourage one another—and all the more as you see the Day approaching. Hebrews 10:25

Be sure, though, to ask God to control your search, to ensure that you end up in the church that He wants you to join, and to avoid the risk of ending up in a liberal church where Satan controls the pulpit. If you already attend a church but it does not fit this criteria, it's time for a change. **Leave and don't even look back!**

For such men are false apostles, deceitful workmen, masquerading as apostles of Christ. And no wonder, for Satan himself masquerades as an angel of light. 2 Corinthians 11:13,14

5-c. Make Some Christian Friends:

Find some people who know, love, and obey the Lord (hopefully members of the church He leads you to) and become friends. Also, find an accountability partner (of your same sex) so you can inspire each other to stay on the "higher path."

He who walks with the wise grows wise, but a companion of fools suffers harm. Proverbs 13:20

If it won't hurt your walk with God, then don't abandon your non-Christian friends. You will not want to join them while they are doing anything which is displeasing to God (and, thus, detrimental to you), but in any relationships which you are able to maintain without sinning, God may be able to use you to keep those friends out of hell. If, however, your old friends are going to drag you back into sin, then **leave and don't even look back!**

Do not be misled: Bad company corrupts good character. 1 Corinthians 15:33

5-d. Do Not Be Unequally Yoked:

Do not marry a non-Christian! Do not go into business with a non-Christian! Do not buy property with a non-Christian! Do not rent an apartment with a non-Christian!

Do not be yoked together with unbelievers. For what do righteousness and wickedness have in common? Or what fellowship can light have with darkness? What harmony is there between Christ and Belial? What does a believer have in common with an unbeliever? What agreement is there between the temple of God and idols? For we are the temple of the living God. 2 Corinthians 6:14-16

Do not get locked into any type of legal or moral contract with anyone who is subject to Satan's control!

We know that we are children of God, and that the whole world is under the control of the evil one. 1

John 5:19

If you are married to a non-Christian, the Bible says that you are to remain in that marriage and that God may be able to use you to save your spouse.

If any brother has a wife who is not a believer and she is willing to live with him, he must not divorce her. And if a woman has a husband who is not a believer and he is willing to live with her, she must not divorce him. 1 Corinthians 7:12,13

Wives, in the same way be submissive to your husbands so that, if any of them do not believe the word, they may be won over without words by the behavior of their wives, when they see the purity and reverence of your lives. 1 Peter 3:1

If, however, your spouse abandons you (as opposed to being “run off”), or becomes maritally unfaithful, then you are not required to remain in that marriage.

But if the unbeliever leaves, let him do so. A believing man or woman is not bound in such circumstances; God has called us to live in peace. 1 Corinthians 7:15

. . . anyone who divorces his wife, except for marital unfaithfulness, causes her to become an adulteress, and anyone who marries the divorced woman commits adultery. Matthew 5:32,33

If you are considering marrying a non-Christian--thinking that you will lead them to God after the wedding--**forget it!** It could happen, but it is totally against God’s will, and your spouse may end up leading your kids to hell.

5-e. Start Off Each Day by Praying and Reading the Bible:

Get up in the morning and spend time with God before you spend time in the world. Before you face the day’s problems and pain, focus on God’s promises and power. Before you run into temptation, remember heaven’s treasure. Before you listen to the world, listen to God, and ask Him to help you. Ask Him for the faith, courage, strength, knowledge, understanding, discernment, and wisdom to live a righteous and eternally rewarding life and to become all that He wants you to be.

Be still, and know that I am God; . . . Psalm 46:10

5-f. Make Your Media Christian:

Start reading Christian literature and listening to Christian radio. There is some Christian programming which is an unfortunate waste of air-time and some which is terribly boring, but there is a great amount of it which is absolutely wonderful. Start flipping your radio dial throughout the day to find the stations and programs you will enjoy and that most address your life. (Don’t forget to compare everything you hear and read with the Bible, and ask God to keep you aware of any lies or errors.) In the Dallas area, there are some excellent 24-hour-a-day Christian radio stations offering a variety of teaching, news, music, and informational programs with a completely Christian bias. This is a wonderful change from the godless, immoral, anti-family bias which is being pushed, but denied, through most media outlets. I have listed these radio stations and the individual ministries which have been the greatest blessings to me at the front of this book. I have also listed their Internet addresses in case you don’t have any good ones in your area.

Finally, brothers, whatever is true, whatever is noble, whatever is right, whatever is pure, whatever is lovely, whatever is admirable—if anything is excellent or praiseworthy—think about such things. Philippians 4:8

When you change your media, be prepared to learn many things about what is going on in our world that you would otherwise never know.

... my people are destroyed from lack of knowledge. Hosea 4:6

5-g. Consider the Source of Every Message:

Everybody has an opinion, almost everybody has guidance to offer, and almost none of it is worth listening to, not even that offered by most of the so-called “experts.” (This is why everything in this book is supported by Bible Scripture, obvious logic, and/or scientific and historical fact.) The world is absolutely saturated with godlessness, foolishness, lies, and suggestions on how to run your life. You will be far better off ignoring most of it!

Where is the wise man? Where is the scholar? Where is the philosopher of this age? Has not God made foolish the wisdom of the world? 1 Corinthians 1:20

We know that we are children of God, and that the whole world is under the control of the evil one. 1 John 5:19

Sigmund Freud (1856-1939)--who is applauded as having “greatly advanced the field of psychology” was a professing atheist who regularly participated in occultic activities (along with his associate, Carl Jung). Freud’s analysis of his patients often involved mental telepathy, hypnosis, and dream therapy, (three of Satan’s easiest methods of providing guidance incognito). [51] It is through the subliminal messages received during this type of research that Freud came to develop and teach on such topics as “infant sexuality,” and the “psychological need people have to create God” (whom Freud said doesn’t exist). [19N] [52]

Dr. Alfred Kinsey (1894-1956), who has been called “America’s pioneer sex researcher” produced two books which did much to revolutionize sexual thinking, behavior, and education in the United States. The two books became known as the “Kinsey Report.” Dr. Kinsey did his research as a professor at Indiana University in Bloomington. Here is some information on Kinsey and his “report” which was not made public until years later. Dr. Kinsey relied heavily upon prison inmates and a serial pedophile for his statistical data. Dr. Kinsey was bi-sexual, severely masochistic, deeply involved in pornography, and had multiple-partner sexual encounters. He often exposed himself to and engaged in sex with a number of his hand-picked, all male research associates. He filmed his assistants engaging in sex, and encouraged his wife to have an affair with one of them. Kinsey came to see organized Christianity as an evil influence on a person’s sexual expression. [49]

John Dewey (1859-1952) was a philosopher and educator whose principles have served as a cornerstone for modern progressive education in the United States. Dewey, who was greatly influenced by Charles Darwin, claimed there are no absolute truths or morals and individual liberty is more important than respect for authority (i.e. he was an atheist). He rejected what he called, "the quest for certainty, the search for transcendental truth on which morals was to be rested." He then declared that education must include a student’s moral well being (i.e. the educational establishment must teach students there are no moral absolutes). [23M] [48]

5-h. Choose Your Heroes Wisely:

How can Christians greatly admire people who are not living their lives for God, especially those who are leading overtly sinful lifestyles--those who God calls "fools"? Is it possible for wisdom to admire foolishness?

A fool finds pleasure in evil conduct, but a man of understanding delights in wisdom. Proverbs 10:23

5-i. Keep Many Godly Reminders Around You:

Keep many things around your home, office, etc., to constantly draw your attention to God. These can be favorite Bible verses, a calendar with Scripture, a picture of the cross, etc. Be careful, these items are reminders only and are never to be incorporated into worship. Remember that the Lord is always with us, and we do not need anything to bring us closer. I must also caution you against any so-called pictures or statues of Jesus. (I had one above my fireplace which He led me to remove.)

You saw no form of any kind the day the LORD spoke to you at Horeb out of the fire. Therefore watch yourselves very carefully, so that you do not become corrupt and make for yourselves an idol, an image of any shape, whether formed like a man or a woman, . . . Deuteronomy 4:15,16

No one living today knows what Jesus looked like while human--other than being Jewish and having short hair—

Does not the very nature of things teach you that if a man has long hair, it is a disgrace to him, but that if a woman has long hair, it is her glory? 1 Corinthians 11:14

but whatever it was, it's not what He looks like now.

There He was transfigured before them. His face shown like the sun, and His clothes became as white as the light. Matthew 17:2

(It is not illegal, in in the United States, to have Christian paraphernalia in the workplace. Nor is it illegal for a student to carry a Bible to school or to wear a Christian T-shirt. If you have any questions regarding this subject, contact one of the Christian legal organizations listed at the end of this book.)

5-j. Keep a Journal of God's Loving Intervention:

Get a notebook and start keeping a record of God's loving, sovereign, and omnipotent hand upon your life. Every time He blesses you in a way that you can see His control, record the event (thoroughly enough to understand years later). Keep your book handy, up to date, and clearly written. If you can't keep it with you, then be sure to stick a note in your pocket every time He intervenes, for future recording. (Don't wait too long, He will get way ahead of you.) Then, every once in a while, get it out and read it. It can be such a comfort in times of difficulty and such a faith builder at any time. (My journal has over 300 entries from events over the last thirty years, most of these occurring in only the last ten.)

5-k. Forgive, Forget, and Press On:

We are different people after accepting God. We are not simply people who are different. This change is so dramatic that our spirits have actually been “born again.”

*In reply Jesus declared, “I tell you the truth, no one can see the kingdom of God unless he is born again.”
John 3:3*

We, therefore, need to live like it. We need to forget what has happened in the past (to that person whom we used to be), forgive all old offenses (committed by ourselves or others), and press on toward the goal. We need to fix our eyes upon Jesus--upon what He wants us to do and what He wants us to become--and go for it with all that we are. A race was never won by people stopping to consider the falls which they have suffered, but many have been won by people who have fallen, gotten back up, and kept running. God wants us to start running and then to keep running.

Forgetting what is behind and straining toward what is ahead, I press on toward the goal to win the prize for which God has called me heavenward in Christ Jesus. All of us who are mature should take such a view of things. Philippians 3:13-15

5-l. Go For It:

Go for this relationship with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your strength, and do it for the rest of your life! Don’t ever stop running! Don’t ever slack off from growing closer to God or retire from serving Him. Wrap your entire life around Him and make Him your everything: your purpose, promise, peace, power, pleasure, and prosperity. Don’t let anybody or anything slow you down. It’s your life, your eternity, and your relationship with God. **Go for it!!!**

5-m. Destroy Satan’s Strongholds In Your Life:

Before concluding these suggestions for enhancing your walk with God, there is one more thing which needs to be considered. You may need to free yourself from any strongholds (any control) that Satan has on your life.

For though we live in the world, we do not wage war as the world does. The weapons we fight with are not the weapons of the world. On the contrary, they have divine power to demolish strongholds. We demolish arguments and every pretension that sets itself up against the knowledge of God, and we take captive every thought to make it obedient to Christ. 2 Corinthians 10:3-5

Many people decide that they truly want to live their lives for God but find there are just some areas which are seemingly uncontrollable. They have ruled out both physical and psychological problems, and they truly want to obey the Lord, but they are simply unable to achieve any success in certain areas. In these cases, the problem may be demonic oppression. If you feel this may be true in your case, you will be happy to know the problem is not only conquerable, it may be much easier than you realize. Now in order to explain all of this--what a stronghold is, how they are built, and how to tear them down--an analogy is necessary.

Imagine that just outside a particular town, in an unincorporated area, there are a number of

people who own pickup trucks. Imagine that these people have some sort of physical disability which makes it impossible for them to function outside of their trucks.

Now we know that if the earthly tent we live in is destroyed, we have a building from God, an eternal house in heaven, not built by human hands. Meanwhile we groan, longing to be clothed with our heavenly dwelling. . . . 2 Corinthians 5:1,2

In order to cope with this disability, their lives have been arranged and their trucks equipped, so they have everything they need to function in society. They deliver various products for their occupations, bank with drive-up tellers, eat at drive-through restaurants, etc.

Imagine also that in this same area, there are a bunch of criminals who are in the business of hijacking trucks. These hijackers, though, do not operate as criminals normally do; they have no weapons--no guns, knives, clubs, or anything else. (Their hideout was raided by the *Authorities*, and they lost all of their firepower.)

And having disarmed the powers and authorities, he made a public spectacle of them, triumphing over them by the cross. Colossians 2:15

What they do have is cunning and deception; they use many ingenious schemes to accomplish their goals.

Put on the full armor of God so that you can take your stand against the devil's schemes. Ephesians 6:11

They entice people into altered states of consciousness (through alcohol and drug induced stupors, hypnosis, transcendental meditation, etc.), so their victims lose their ability to think rationally; thus losing the ability and will to protect their trucks. Occasionally, they try to get them into deep, meditative, dream-like states, then to sleep-walk out of their trucks (astral projection—i.e. an “out-of-truck experience”), thereby leaving their trucks unattended and unprotected. Sometimes they are able to take advantage of a driver’s vulnerability during a severe trauma (such as when a child is being violated by a trusted parent or guardian).

At other times, the highjackers trick the drivers into interacting with them on a personal level, enticing the drivers into involvement in the criminal’s realm (the occult: visualization and guided imagery, horoscopes, fortune telling, seances, witchcraft, the cultivation of psychic abilities, Ouija boards, and various occult role playing games). This requires the drivers to either roll down a window or open a door.

Participants in occult role playing games do not have to take the games seriously to invite serious demonic problems. [33]

Sometimes the criminals openly promise the drivers some benefit if the drivers will knowingly invite them in to participate in breaking the law (Satanism). Still at other times, they are able to interact with the drivers while the drivers are involved in severe and/or addictive sins (such as drug and alcohol abuse, idolatry, sexual immorality, pornography, gambling, vengeance, or harboring anger), as the drivers are too far from the nearby town’s *Legal/Moral Authority* to be protected. Once a highjacker establishes this initial contact, he begins working to gain control of the truck.

A hijack, however, is not always accomplished in a single attempt. Quite often, it occurs over a period of time and in a series of steps. On the first attempt, a highjacker may only be able to climb into the bed of the truck. Once there, he can have more of an effect upon the driver, as he can communicate with him at will,

Satan rose up against Israel and incited David to take a census of Israel. 1 Chronicles 21:1

or flash pictures clearly in the driver's view--trying to get him to make another mistake.

When I think my bed will comfort me and my couch will ease my complaint, even then you frighten me with dreams and terrify me with visions, . . . Job 7:13,14

(Before achieving this position, highjackers are limited to standing next to the road, shouting and flashing pictures as the drivers go by.) The next step is to try to persuade the driver to roll down the window. If successful, the highjacker can stick his hand in the window and take hold of the steering wheel. The driver, secured in the seat and having two hands on the wheel, has the most control, but the hijacker can now try to exercise some physical control over the direction of the truck. The third step will be to try to get the door open. If the hijacker is successful here, he will climb inside the cab and sit down next to the driver. In this position, the hijacker has much more control, but is still at a disadvantage because of the driver's position relative to the controls. The next step, therefore, is to try to get into the driver's seat. There may be many more battles from this point forward, as the driver and the highjacker may struggle back and forth over this position.

A man in the crowd answered, "Teacher, I brought you my son, who is possessed by a spirit that has robbed him of speech. Whenever it seizes him, it throws him to the ground. He foams at the mouth, gnashes his teeth and becomes rigid. . . . When the spirit saw Jesus, it immediately threw the boy into a convulsion. He fell to the ground and rolled around, foaming at the mouth. . . . It has often thrown him into fire or water to kill him. Mark 9:17,18,20,22

[*** When demons take over people who have rejected God, it occasionally results in the murder of God's people through such things as school and church shootings.]

In the 1999 massacre at Columbine High School in Littleton Colorado, Cassie Bernall (one of the students killed) was asked if she believed in God. With the demon possessed killer's gun at her head she courageously responded, "Yes, I believe in God!"

The righteous perish, and no one ponders it in his heart; devout men are taken away, and no one understands that the righteous are taken away to be spared from evil. Isaiah 57:1

When he opened the fifth seal, I saw under the alter the souls who had been slain because of the word of God and the testimony they had maintained. Revelation 6:9

Unfortunately, once a highjacker has gotten into the cab, he may be able to open the door (or lead the driver to do so) in order to allow other highjackers in with him.

When he saw Jesus from a distance, he ran and fell on his knees in front of him. He shouted at the top of his voice, "What do you want with me, Jesus, Son of the Most High God? Swear to God that you won't torture me!" For Jesus had said to him, "Come out of this man, you evil spirit!" Then Jesus asked him, "What is your name?" "My name is Legion," he replied, "for we are many." . . . The demons begged Jesus, "Send us among the pigs; allow us to go into them." He gave them permission, and the evil spirits came out and went into the pigs. The heard, about two thousand in number, rushed down the steep bank into the lake and were drowned. Mark 5:6-9,12,13

Imagine also that the drivers of these pickup trucks have the opportunity to become citizens of this nearby town by agreeing to accept the Mayor's authority and having their names put on the official register.

Nothing impure will ever enter it, nor will anyone who does what is shameful or deceitful, but only those whose names are written in the Lamb's book of life. Revelation 21:27

If they do, an all-knowing, invincible, and heavily armed *Police Officer* is appointed to ride inside the cab with them -- permanently.

Do you not know that your body is a temple of the Holy Spirit, who is in you, whom you have received from God? 1 Corinthians 6:19

You, dear children, are from God and have overcome them, because the one who is in you is greater than the one who is in the world. 1 John 4:4

If a truck driver who has been or is in the process of being highjacked chooses to do this, the highjacker may immediately abandon his efforts the moment the *Police Officer* arrives. At other times, the highjacker may try to hang around, but ultimately leave as the driver seeks more and more to obey the *Police Officer* and to resist him.

Submit yourselves, then, to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you. James 4:7

Still at other times, the driver may need to enlist the help of the *Police Officer* to get rid of the highjacker. In order to do this, the driver needs to confess and repent of any sin (or sins) which he personally committed which allowed the demon (oops, I mean the highjacker) the rights to the position he holds. (The *Police Officer* can help supply this information if needed.) He then needs to command “by the authority of the *Mayor*, and by the power of the *Police Officer*,” that he release his stronghold on the truck and get out of his life.

For though we live in the world, we do not wage war as the world does. The weapons we fight with are not the weapons of the world. On the contrary, they have divine power to demolish strongholds. 2 Corinthians 10:3,4

However, do not rejoice that the spirits submit to you, but rejoice that your names are written in heaven. Luke 10:20

And these signs will accompany those who believe: In my name they will drive out demons: . . . Mark 16:17

This is when the *Police Officer* begins reaching for *His* gun. Once he does, and the highjacker leaves, the driver then needs to ask the *Police Officer* to help him close and lock all the windows and doors and to occupy all of the area which was vacated by the highjacker or highjackers. (This is like asking *Him* to flex all *His* muscles to fill up the space).

If the highjacker is there because of someone else's sin, even someone living generations before (i.e. the highjacker was already in the truck when the driver received it from his parents), then the stronghold that the highjacker has still needs to be broken. This, again, is accomplished by using the “authority of the *Mayor*, and the power of the *Police Officer*.”

In this analogy, as you can probably tell, the pickup truck is a person's body, the driver is his eternal spirit (which presently resides inside his physical body), the highjackers are demons, the *Mayor* is Jesus, and the *Police Officer* is the Holy Spirit.

Now we know that if the earthly tent we live in is destroyed, we have a building from God, an eternal house in heaven, not built by human hands. Meanwhile we groan, longing to be clothed with our heavenly dwelling, . . . 2 Corinthians 5:1,2

When he saw Jesus from a distance, he ran and fell on his knees in front of him. He shouted at the top of his voice, “What do you want with me, Jesus, Son of the Most High God? Swear to God that you won't torture me!” For Jesus had said to him, “Come out of this man, you evil spirit!” Then Jesus asked him,

“What is your name?” “My name is Legion,” he replied, “for we are many.” . . . The demons begged Jesus, “Send us among the pigs; allow us to go into them.” He gave them permission, and the evil spirits came out and went into the pigs. The heard, about two thousand in number, rushed down the steep bank into the lake and were drowned. Mark 5:6-9,12,13

Do you not know that your body is a temple of the Holy Spirit, who is in you, whom you have received from God? 1 Corinthians 6:19

If Satan and his demonic cohorts have a stronghold in your life (if they’re messing around with your truck) and you have already accepted Jesus as your Lord and Savior, then do the following. Audibly (you are talking both to God and to the enemy, and demons cannot hear your thoughts), confess any sin (or sins) which you committed which gave the enemy the stronghold. Repent of it: Tell both God and Satan that you are no longer going to do it--“In the name of Jesus Christ, and by the power of the Holy Spirit!” Then tell them: “This sin has been confessed, repented of, and forgiven by the blood which Jesus shed at the cross, and now any rights, any control, any power which Satan has had over my life because of this sin is broken!” Then tell the enemy: “Get out of my life — in Jesus name!” Then, in cooperation with the Holy Spirit, close and seal the entrances which let them in. Say, “In the name of Jesus Christ and by the power of the Holy Spirit, I close and seal all entrances into my life which the enemy used for entry!” Finally, ask the Holy Spirit to fill all the voids in your life which the enemy has vacated. (While this will break an enemy stronghold regarding a particular area of sin in your life, it will not stop all temptation. They will still “stand next to the road shouting and flashing pictures as you go by.” If you ever need to just “shut them up” for a while--as you are “going by”--command them to leave you alone “in Jesus’ name” and start praising the Lord audibly.)

If you have any generational sins, curses, or strongholds in your life which have been passed down to you from your relatives, or from anyone else, then command (audibly) that they be broken — by the authority of the blood of Jesus Christ, your Heavenly Father. Our relationship with God has authority over all earthly bonds and bondage.

If you have severe demonic problems and are going to need help from other Christians to get rid of them, then **ask God to direct you** to a good ‘deliverance ministry’ in your area, or get in touch with Bob Larson Ministries @ www.bob-larson.org.

6. SEEK GOD’S BLESSINGS FOR OTHER PEOPLE:

Needless to say, a good portion of this book is about the blessedness of a relationship between God and you (between God and each one of us individually). This is not, however, the end of the story, nor the end of our mission. God is infinite in many ways, and there is certainly more than enough of Him for all of us. After His love has been extended to us, it is then to extend through us to other people. (If the world is dying of thirst and we find an eternal spring of water, we are not to keep it to ourselves.)

Jesus answered, “Everyone who drinks this water will be thirsty again, but whoever drinks the water I give him will never thirst. Indeed, the water I give him will become in him a spring of water welling up to eternal life.” John 4:13,14

6-a. Lead Other People To God:

The most important thing which we are supposed to do for the people around us is, of course, to lead them down this same path

Go into all the world and preach the good news to all creation. Whoever believes and is baptized will be saved, but whoever does not believe will be condemned. Mark 16:15,16

(which is not illegal in most business or educational situations).

***** It is not illegal to tell people about God while attending school, nor in most situations while at your job. Just don't do it instead of working. If you have any questions regarding this subject, contact one of the Christian legal organizations listed at the end of this book.**

We need to do everything we possibly can to get those around us--especially the members of our own families--to accept Jesus. Also, if we are in authority, especially if we are the husband and/or father, we must continually remind ourselves that the family is a model and bridge to this relationship with God. We need to try, with His guidance and power, to represent Him properly to our children and other loved ones, explaining to them whenever we mess up that God never does. (I have had to do this on many occasions.) So do it! Dedicate your loved ones to God and lead them to Him. Live by His love, love by His power, take them to church, learn and teach them the Bible (starting with a toddler's Bible if appropriate), and pray for them as long as they are here on earth.

Fix these words of mine in your hearts and minds; . . . Teach them to your children, talking about them when you sit at home and when you walk along the road, when you lie down and when you get up. Deuteronomy 11:18,19

*** If you have ever desired a clear view of the overall story told in the Bible, to know how everything fits together, just start taking your children through a children's Bible story book. The Bible is not arranged in chronological order, and teaching my children in this way has benefited me immensely.

Here are the Bible's / Bible story books which we used with our children:

The Beginner's Bible, by Karyn Henley and Denna Davis. (For toddlers) / Published by Questar / Publishers, Inc. Sisters, Oregon

Read'n Grow Picture Bible (For ages 5 to 9) / Published by Word Publishing, Inc., Dallas*London*Vancouver*Melbourne

The Golden Children's Bible (Pictures with actual Bible text. Approx. 3rd grade reading level) / Published by Western Publishing Company, Inc., Racine, Wisconsin 53404

International Children's Bible, New Century Version (Entire Bible - 3rd grade reading level) / Published by Word Publishing, Inc., Dallas*London*Vancouver*Melbourne

Remember, too, that when we are living in obedience to God, our prayers are very powerful.

The prayer of a righteous man is powerful and effective. James 5:16

So, husbands, wives, fathers, mothers, grandparents, and children--get involved in the lives of

your loved ones and fulfill the role God has given you--the way He says to fulfill it! Listed below are various scripture verses which pertain to each of our roles in the family. We all need to learn them, and we all need to live by them.

Husbands:

He who finds a wife finds what is good and receives favor from the LORD. Proverbs 18:22

'For this reason a man will leave his father and mother and be united to his wife, and the two will become one flesh'? So they are no longer two, but one. Therefore what God has joined together, let man not separate. Matthew 19:5-6

This means mentally, physically, emotionally, and financially "leaving the nest" to be joined with a wife "for life." (I feel sorry for the divorce lawyers and judges who casually grant divorces, when they stand before God on judgment day.)

Husbands, love your wives, just as Christ loved the church and gave himself up for her to make her holy . . . Ephesians 5:25-30

Christ loved the church enough to be tortured and die for it!

Husbands, love your wives and do not be harsh with them. Colossians 3:19

Love is patient, love is kind. It does not envy, it does not boast, it is not proud. It is not rude, it is not self-seeking, it is not easily angered, it keeps no record of wrongs. Love does not delight in evil but rejoices with the truth. It always protects, always trusts, always hopes, always perseveres! Love never fails. 1 Corinthians 13:4-8

This is "how" a husband is to love his wife.

Husbands, in the same way be considerate as you live with your wives, and treat them with respect as the weaker partner and as heirs with you of the gracious gift of life, so that nothing will hinder your prayers. 1 Peter 3:7

A man is no more important than a woman! The strength he has enables him to be protector and provider, and the authority he has is based upon position, not superiority. If a husband fails to love his wife or treats her disrespectfully, his prayers may be useless. There is a good analogy which compares the family to a football team. The husband is like the quarterback and the wife is like the wide receiver. The husband calls the plays, not because he is a superior player, but because of his perspective. If either player messes up, they answer to the Coach, not to each other.

The wife's body does not belong to her alone but also to her husband. In the same way, the husband's body does not belong to him alone but also to his wife. Do not deprive each other except by mutual consent and for a time, so that you may devote yourselves to prayer. Then come together again so that Satan will not tempt you because of your lack of self-control. 1 Corinthians 7:4,5

Wives:

Wives, submit to your husbands as to the Lord. For the husband is the head of the wife as Christ is the head of the church, his body, of which he is the Savior. Now as the church submits to Christ, so also

wives should submit to their husbands in everything. *Ephesians 5:22-24*

Please note that this verse says that a wife should submit to her husband in the same way that the church submits to God. If this doesn't truly mean that a wife is to obey her husband, then the church is not truly supposed to obey God.

Wives, submit to your husbands, as is fitting in the Lord. Colossians 3:18

The only time a wife is ever to disobey her husband is when obeying him requires her to disobey God.

[Anytime human sin causes two of God's laws to come into conflict, we are to obey the higher law.]

'Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind.' This is the first and greatest commandment. And the second is like it: 'Love your neighbor as yourself.' *Matthew 22:37-39*

Wives, in the same way be submissive to your husbands so that, if any of them do not believe the word, they may be won over without words by the behavior of their wives, when they see the purity and reverence of your lives. 1 Peter 3:1

This is written to the Christian wife who has a non-Christian husband.

... and the wife must respect her husband. Ephesians 5:33

The wife's body does not belong to her alone but also to her husband. In the same way, the husband's body does not belong to him alone but also to his wife. Do not deprive each other except by mutual consent and for a time, so that you may devote yourselves to prayer. Then come together again so that Satan will not tempt you because of your lack of self-control. 1 Corinthians 7:4,5

Better to live on a corner of the roof than share a house with a quarrelsome wife. Proverbs 25:24

Parents / Grandparents:

Sons are a heritage from the LORD, children a reward from Him. Like arrows in the hands of a warrior are sons born in one's youth. Blessed is the man whose quiver is full of them. Psalm 127:3-5

Fathers, do not exasperate your children; instead, bring them up in the training and instruction of the Lord. Ephesians 6:4

"Fathers" (not mothers) are commanded to be the spiritual leaders of the home and to teach and train their children to obey God. Fathers are to take their children to church! Fathers are to lead home Bible study! Fathers are to begin family prayer!

Letting children make their own decisions regarding moral issues is allowing Satan and the world to have the only input.

Fathers, do not embitter your children, or they will become discouraged. Colossians 3:21

He who spares the rod hates his son, but he who loves him is careful to discipline him. Proverbs 13:24

Do not withhold discipline from a child; if you punish him with the rod, he will not die. Punish him with the rod and save his soul from death. Proverbs 23:13,14

If you are in a blended family, love your new children because they are now yours, and make them obey you because it is God's command.

Young men, in the same way be submissive to those who are older. 1 Peter 5:5

Children:

Children, obey your parents in the Lord, for this is right. “Honor your father and mother”—which is the first commandment with a promise—“that it may go well with you and that you may enjoy long life on the earth. Ephesians 6:1-3

If you want a short, miserable life, start dishonoring your parents.

Children, obey your parents in the Lord, for this is right. Ephesians 6:1

If your parents tell you to do something which is against God’s will, your parents are not “in the Lord.”

[Anytime human sin causes two of God’s laws to come into conflict, we are to obey the higher law.]

‘Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind.’ This is the first and greatest commandment. And the second is like it: ‘Love your neighbor as yourself.’ Matthew 22:37-39

Young men, in the same way be submissive to those who are older. 1 Peter 5:5

Listen, my son, to your father’s instruction and do not forsake your mother’s teaching. They will be a garland to grace your head and a chain to adorn your neck. Proverbs 1:8,9

We also need to be as much of a shield between our loved ones and the evil that this world is relentlessly spewing out as we can possibly be.

We know that we are children of God, and that the whole world is under the control of the evil one. 1 John 5:19

This may require some major changes, such as home schooling your children or (cautiously and prayerfully) selecting a Christian school for them to attend. Either one of these can be accomplished by the power and provision of God, and neither will cost you an eternal thing. (Home schooling can be done inexpensively.) You also need to be extremely sure they are not only walking closely with God, but are prepared for battle (ready to lead people to salvation rather than succumb to the opposing views of peers and professors) before sending them off to a secular college. Probe Ministries offers the “Mind Games Conference” designed for this purpose.

From Probe Ministries’ conference brochure: “The Mind Games conference will give Christians the basic tools and methods they need to start building a Christian world view. It will enable them to defend their beliefs with intellectual integrity, clarity, patience, and compassion. This is not just a “pep talk.” It is an intensive, foundational study of why Christians believe as they do, and a precise look at areas where Christian beliefs contradict the tenets of other religions, philosophies, and contemporary culture. Participants leave the conference with their faith strengthened and their knowledge increased. / Scholars with impressive credentials and experience in the academic community will teach this conference.” — Probe Ministries / www.probe.org.

If your children are not **thoroughly** prepared for this battle, and/or God does not personally guide them to attend a secular college, then they need to go to a **truly** Christian college!

Injured children:

If you're the child in all of this, and your model and bridge have been destroyed, all you've missed are the model and the bridge. The goal is still attainable. Our perfect and loving Heavenly Father is still here, reaching tenderly past all the damage to where you are. Take His hand, let Him lift you out of the wreckage of your life and show you how absolutely wonderful "family" was meant to be.

Though my father and mother forsake me, the LORD will receive me. Psalm 27:10

6-b. Vote God's Blessings on This Country:

There is one more thing we need to do for the people around us, as well as for ourselves. We need to vote for God's blessings (and against God's curses) on this country. Admittedly, God has never called Christians to "save their society." As one preacher put it: "God didn't call us to clean up the pond, He called us to fish out of it!"

"Come, follow me," Jesus said, "and I will make you fishers of men." Mark 1:17

He has, however, put us in a situation--at least here in the United States--where we have the ability to help decide who will run our government and what the laws of our land will be. **It is, therefore, our God-given responsibility to vote morally, according to what He says is right or wrong in the Bible.** When we see that a particular candidate or law will result in more evil than another, but we fail to vote the moral choice (fiscal policy never takes precedence over morality in God's eyes), or we fail to vote at all, we have committed a sin against God and the people around us.

Anyone, then, who knows the good he ought to do and doesn't do it, sins. James 4:17

(If God's children fail to vote, then who does that leave to vote?)

We know that we are children of God, and that the whole world is under the control of the evil one. 1 John 5:19

If we truly want our country saved, healed, and prosperous, what we need to do is get the people of this country to repent and turn back to God--starting with the church--and let Him take care of the rest.

... if my people, who are called by my name, will humble themselves and pray and seek my face and turn from their wicked ways, then I will hear from heaven and will forgive their sin and will heal their land. 2 Chronicles 7:14

You may say to yourself, "My power and the strength of my hands have produced this wealth for me." But remember the LORD your God, for it is he who gives you the ability to produce wealth, and so confirms his covenant, which he swore to your forefathers, as it is today. If you ever forget the LORD your God and follow other gods and worship and bow down to them, I testify against you today that you will surely be destroyed. Like the nations the LORD destroyed before you, so you will be destroyed for not obeying the LORD your God. Deuteronomy 8:17-20

Chapter A-12

SO WHAT CAN YOU EXPECT?

The answer to this question is going to be limited to what we can expect in this life as God-fearing, obedient Christians. This is written, assuming that you have now accepted Jesus as Lord and Savior, and have truly decided to live your life for Him. We will also assume for this discussion that this life is going to continue--that we will not be “raptured out” (when God removes all His children from the earth) or be called home for some other reason.

For the Lord himself will come down from heaven, with a loud command, with the voice of the archangel and with the trumpet call of God, and the dead in Christ will rise first. After that, we who are still alive and are left will be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air. And so we will be with the Lord forever. 1 Thessalonians 4:16,17

What is your life? You are a mist that appears for a little while and then vanishes. Instead, you ought to say, “If it is the Lord's will, we will live and do this or that.” James 4:14,15

Now, having limited our discussion to this particular period of time, there is actually no one other than God who can even begin to answer this question with any certainty. Things are changing so fast, and there are so many major variables shaking this country (and this world) right now, that none of us knows what's about to happen. Between our societal and governmental plunge into godlessness, personal and government debt, riots and the growing anarchy in our cities, increasing numbers of ecological problems, the threat of nuclear, chemical, and/or biological warfare, our country's future doesn't look very promising. Acknowledging that some major life changing event could occur, we will assume for this discussion that it will not. This question, therefore, will be answered based upon our society's current condition and trends, and what the Bible tells us to expect.

A. YOU CAN EXPECT TO FEEL DIFFERENT ABOUT SIN, AND TO BEGIN A LIFE-LONG PROCESS OF CHANGE.

Initially, at the point of salvation--at the moment you ask Jesus to become your Lord and Savior--you may or may not feel a thing. Most people don't. What you should feel is a difference toward sin. You will never again be able to knowingly sin against God and feel good about it afterward. (If you can, you had better go back to the beginning of this book and start over.) You can also expect God to begin changing you--to begin a life-long process of character development. His plan is for us to become humble, loving, righteous, trustworthy, generous, patient, kind, gentle, temperate, and self-controlled people. This development is referred to in the Bible as the process of sanctification.

May God himself, the God of peace, sanctify you through and through. May your whole spirit, soul and

body be kept blameless at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ. 1 Thessalonians 5:23

Please understand that God wanting to change us does not mean that He doesn't love us or accept us. He does — just the way we are. He simply loves us too much to leave us this way. He knows that sin—even confessed and forgiven—can still destroy our earthly lives, as well as the lives of the people around us.

*(Read the story of King David, who God forgave for adultery and murder. He lost three sons, his daughter was raped, and he almost lost his kingdom, all as a direct or indirect result of these sins.)
2 Samuel chapters 11 - 20*

God also has a plan for this world which requires our loving and righteous involvement; thus, in order for either one of His plans to succeed, we must become the people He wants us to be. What many Christians fail to realize is the fascinating and frightening way God has chosen to rule the human race. He has chosen to intervene in the affairs of man, often at the request of and in cooperation with man. Remember, He will not disregard man's free-will. He has, therefore, made this life a team effort. He is going to accomplish many of His goals only when His children ask, help, and agree, and are living in obedience. (This is why it is frightening.)

The prayer of a righteous man is powerful and effective. James 5:16

God uses our prayers, to get involved;

And pray in the Spirit on all occasions with all kinds of prayers and requests. With this in mind, be alert and always keep on praying for all the saints. Ephesians 6:18

our hands and feet, to love, serve, and help one another;

You, my brothers, were called to be free. But do not use your freedom to indulge the sinful nature; rather, serve one another in love. Galatians 5:13

Not so with you. Instead, whoever wants to become great among you must be your servant, and whoever wants to be first must be your slave—just as the Son of Man did not come to be served, but to serve, and to give his life as a ransom for many. Matthew 20:26-28

and our voices, to tell the world about salvation.

Go into all the world and preach the good news to all creation. Mark 16:15

So, here's the program: It is the love and power of God, in cooperation with the will and service of man, bringing about the things that God wants to happen.

Notice that it is the things that "God wants to happen." It is never the "will of man" exclusively.

This is the confidence we have in approaching God: that if we ask anything according to his will, he hears us. And if we know that he hears us—whatever we ask—we know that we have what we asked of him. 1 John 5:14,15

God is not going to do anything or grant any requests which are against His will. If He did, if He moved according to the uninformed, irrational, and near-sighted requests which we so often make, this world would be in far worse trouble than it already is.

As the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways and my thoughts than your thoughts. Isaiah 55:9

The righteous perish, and no one ponders it in his heart; devout men are taken away, and no one understands that the righteous are taken away to be spared from evil. Those who walk uprightly enter into peace; they find rest as they lie in death. Isaiah 57:1,2

Understanding that this world is a joint effort, we can see the importance of thinking and speaking and being like Jesus (not in deity but in all the characteristics listed above). As it is with any team, nothing gets accomplished until we are all striving to accomplish the same goals. Therefore, upon accepting salvation, we can expect (1) to feel negative about sin, (2) for God to begin the loving and patient (though not always painless) process of making us more like Himself, and (3) after we have experienced some growth, to begin being used in the lives of other people.

B. YOU CAN EXPECT CONFLICT.

I would love to tell you that God's seeking to change us, combined with our natural resistance to being changed, is the only conflict we will experience as Christians. Unfortunately, this is not the case. The Christian life is a life of conflict. Being a Christian is being at war! It is war with ourselves, war with the world, and war with Satan.

1. WAR WITH OURSELVES

In the war with ourselves, it is our new God-given born again spirit, which wants to cooperate with the Holy Spirit, versus our flesh (our sinful human nature), which is attracted to the evil which this world has to offer.

So I say, live by the Spirit, and you will not gratify the desires of the sinful nature. For the sinful nature desires what is contrary to the Spirit, and the Spirit what is contrary to the sinful nature. They are in conflict with each other, so that you do not do what you want. Galatians 5:16,17

Do not love the world or anything in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him. For everything in the world—the cravings of sinful man, the lust of his eyes and the boasting of what he has and does—comes not from the Father but from the world. 1 John 2:15

This means we will be torn at times between wanting to obey God (which may require waiting for a reward and may not be the easiest path to take at the time) and the desire for quicker gratification and a less troublesome walk through this life. God is going to ask each of us to make some choices that we might otherwise never make. What we must always remember, though, is that God's ways are always the best and His rewards last forever.

But store up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where moth and rust do not destroy, and where thieves do not break in and steal. Matthew 6:20

Remember also, once we have accepted Jesus, we will never again face a temptation which we are unable to resist or that He does not give us a way of escape when facing it.

No temptation has seized you except what is common to man. And God is faithful; he will not let you be tempted beyond what you can bear. But when you are tempted, he will also provide a way out so that you can stand up under it. 1 Corinthians 10:13

2. WAR WITH THE WORLD

In our “war with the world,” we can basically just expect to be hated by much of the world’s population.

If the world hates you, keep in mind that it hated me first. John 15:18

We can also expect persecution.

In fact, everyone who wants to live a godly life in Christ Jesus will be persecuted. . . . 2 Timothy 3:12

This hatred is really beginning to grow in the United States, and it will continue to grow, the farther this country moves away from God. You see, the world hates God. It hates His pronouncement that He is Lord, and we are to obey His commands. It hates the fact that He is Creator and Provider, and we owe all that we have and are to Him. It hates His proclamation that we are sinful and in need of His forgiveness. And it hates His promised judgment upon all who reject Him. Our conflict comes in that we remind the world of God.

If the world hates you, keep in mind that it hated me first. If you belonged to the world, it would love you as it's own. As it is, you do not belong to the world, but I have called you out of the world. That is why the world hates you. John 15:18,19

Our seeking to live obediently before God serves as a ceaseless reminder to the rest of the world that He is watching. The situation is naturally made worse as we seek to carry out our God-given command to tell the world about the good news of salvation.

Go into all the world and preach the good news to all creation. Mark 16:15

We must, however, regardless of the consequences, keep telling them. You or I may be the very ones through whom God can reach certain people, especially friends and members of our own families.

Before leaving this subject, it is important that we understand what our reaction to all this hatred and persecution is to be. Put very simply: We are to love our enemies. We are to love the people who hate us, pray for the people who persecute us, and forgive the people who hurt us.

But I tell you: Love your enemies and pray for those who persecute you, that you may be sons of your Father in heaven Matthew 5:44

Jesus even prayed for the Roman soldiers who had just nailed Him to the cross.

Jesus said, “Father, forgive them, for they do not know what they are doing.” Luke 23:34

You see, God wants us to have His perspective on this war: to see Satan as our enemy and people as our mission. A Christian’s mission in life is to grow closer to God, and to lead other people down the same path.

For our struggle is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers, against the authorities, against the powers of this dark world and against the spiritual forces of evil in the heavenly realms. Ephesians 6:12

Those who oppose him he must gently instruct, in the hope that God will grant them repentance leading them to a knowledge of the truth, and that they will come to their senses and escape from the trap of the devil, who has taken them captive to do his will. 2 Timothy 2:25,26

(*** God does not intend for us to sit idly by, allowing ourselves to be victimized by random acts of evil. There is certainly nothing wrong with locking our doors, legally carrying a weapon, or learning to defend ourselves.)

He said to them, “But now if you have a purse, take it, and also a bag; and if you don’t have a sword, sell your cloak and buy one. Luke 22:36

3. WAR WITH SATAN

This brings us to our final area of conflict, “war with Satan.” No, our struggles with the enemy are definitely not over once we are saved--once we are released from their power and authority.

*We know that we are children of God, and that the whole world is under the control of the evil one.
1 John 5:19*

Actually, they will grow stronger the more we choose to serve and live for God. You see, we have not been rescued from the enemy to run and hide from the battle; we have been rescued to fight the enemy. Once we have accepted Jesus and have gained a thorough understanding of His Word, we have everything that we need for engaging in spiritual warfare--for fighting against Satan and his forces. Now, we not only have the ability to withstand their attacks against us,

Submit yourselves, then, to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you. James 4:7

we are expected to go back in and rescue more captives — by leading them to salvation. Ephesians chapter 6 gives a list of the spiritual weapons and armor God has made available, and it is extremely important that we learn how to possess and apply them.

Finally, be strong in the Lord and in his mighty power. Put on the full armor of God so that you can take your stand against the devil's schemes. . . . Stand firm then, with the belt of truth buckled around your waist, with the breastplate of righteousness in place, and with your feet fitted with the readiness that comes from the gospel of peace. In addition to all this, take up the shield of faith, with which you can extinguish all the flaming arrows of the evil one. Take the helmet of salvation and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God. And pray in the Spirit on all occasions with all kinds of prayers and requests. With this in mind, be alert and always keep on praying for all the saints. Ephesians 6:10-11,14-18

One of these spiritual weapons is the ability to use God’s name (His authority) over Satan and his demonic forces, to either stop an attack against us, or to force them away from other people and places. This authority is similar to the authority that a police officer has when he commands, “Stop in the name of the law!” When he speaks, he is speaking not with his own authority, but rather, with the authority of the government. If someone resists, he will have the government to contend with.

“However, do not rejoice that the spirits submit to you, but rejoice that your names are written in heaven.” Luke 10:20

And these signs will accompany those who believe: In my name they will drive out demons: . . . Mark 16:17

This works, however, only if the people who are involved are willing to repent and turn to God. If not, then the only truly effective weapon we have is prayer.

The prayer of a righteous man is powerful and effective. James 5:16

Before jumping recklessly into the battle, though, we must (1) develop a strong prayer life, (2) gain an understanding of spiritual warfare, (3) learn how to apply our weapons and armor, and (4) be extremely sure that we are walking in obedience to God. (I would suggest, in preparation for this, that you pray for guidance, then acquire some of the information which is available from Bob Larson Ministries, mentioned in the preceding chapter.) Once we do all this, we become the aggressors in this

war. We are the ones attacking Satan's strongholds (over individuals, families, cities, etc.) and foiling his attempts to lead people toward destruction.

For though we live in the world, we do not wage war as the world does. The weapons we fight with are not the weapons of the world. On the contrary, they have divine power to demolish strongholds.
2 Corinthians 10:3,4

Satan, of course, understands all of this, and it is extremely important that we do too. If we do not, he may increase his attack, seeking to keep us in the "victim role." He would love to keep us in the same defeated condition that we have been in the past--subject to his temptations, accusations, and lies. (Our relationship to Satan after salvation is like having outgrown a bully who's been pushing us around for years. We now have the ability to stop him, but unless we realize it, it may not do us any good.)

C. YOU CAN EXPECT VICTORY, JOY, AND A PEACEFUL SPIRIT!

So we can expect conflict (with Satan, the world, and the flesh) and we can expect often difficult, but always glorious change (as God seeks to make us more and more like Himself) and we can expect them throughout our lives. Change and conflict are part of the Christian experience. On top of it all, though, we can expect victory. If throughout our lives, we are truly seeking to trust and obey the Lord--continuously striving to find and fulfill His will--we will find ourselves winning the battles,

I write to you, young men, because you have overcome the evil one. 1 John 2:13

Who is it that overcomes the world? Only he who believes that Jesus is the Son of God. 1 John 5:5

But now that you have been set free from sin and have become slaves to God, the benefit you reap leads to holiness, and the result is eternal life. Romans 6:22

accomplishing everything He has called us to do,

I can do everything through him who gives me strength. Philippians 4:13

and becoming all He has created us to be.

In all my prayers for all of you, I always pray with joy because of your partnership in the gospel from the first day until now, being confident of this, that he who began a good work in you will carry it on to completion until the day of Christ Jesus. Philippians 1:4-6

We will also find ourselves walking through this life with joy in our hearts and having an inner peace which is beyond the world's understanding;

As the Father has loved me, so I have loved you. Now remain in my love. If you obey my commands, you will remain in my love, just as I have obeyed my Father's commands and remain in his love. I have told you this so that my joy may be in you and that your joy may be complete. John 15:9-11

Do not be anxious about anything, but in everything, by prayer and petition, with thanksgiving, present your requests to God. And the peace of God, which transcends all understanding, will guard your hearts and your minds in Christ Jesus. Philippians 4:6,7

a peace that comes from knowing God, knowing truth, and understanding the realities of life from the eternal perspective. Some of these truths are:

We are God's children and God's friends!

The Spirit himself testifies with our spirit that we are God's children. Romans 8:16

I no longer call you servants, because a servant does not know his master's business. Instead, I have called you friends, for everything that I learned from my Father I have made known to you. John 15:15

He will never leave us nor forsake us!

... God has said, "Never will I leave you; never will I forsake you." Hebrews 13:5

He will never quit loving us!

For I am convinced that neither death nor life, neither angels nor demons, neither the present nor the future, nor any powers, neither height nor depth, nor anything else in all creation, will be able to separate us from the love of God that is in Christ Jesus our Lord. Romans 8:38,39

He will meet all of our needs!

And my God will meet all your needs according to His glorious riches in Christ Jesus. Philippians 4:19

He will give us the (beneficial) desires of our hearts!

If you remain in me and my words remain in you, ask whatever you wish, and it will be given you. John 15:7

He has promised to make everything work for our good!

And we know that in all things God works for the good of those who love him, who have been called according to his purpose. Romans 8:28

We are totally forgiven and made righteous (when we confess and repent)!

If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just and will forgive us our sins and purify us from all unrighteousness. 1 John 1:9

We have eternal life and will live forever with God in heaven!

I tell you the truth, whoever hears my word and believes him who sent me has eternal life and will not be condemned; he has crossed over from death to life. John 5:24

In my Father's house are many rooms; if it were not so, I would have told you. I am going there to prepare a place for you. John 14:2

Our treasures are eternal and can never be lost, stolen, or destroyed!

Provide purses for yourselves that will not wear out, a treasure in heaven that will not be exhausted, where no thief comes near and no moth destroys. Luke 12:33

Our lives have a great and eternal purpose!

For we are God's workmanship, created in Christ Jesus to do good works, which God prepared in advance for us to do. Ephesians 2:10

We have God's wisdom, while all the world has is foolishness!

For the LORD gives wisdom, and from his mouth come knowledge and understanding. Proverbs 2:6

For the wisdom of this world is foolishness in God's sight. 1 Corinthians 3:19

Chapter A-13

WHAT IS GOD?

Having reached this point, you may now be puzzled over the arrangement of the chapters in this book. This chapter, no doubt, seems as though it would be more appropriately placed near the front. Logically, according to the flow of information, it should. It is here, however, for a reason. This is the order in which God revealed and illuminated all of this information to me. He wanted to ensure that I thoroughly understood Him as a father, and as a friend (which was accomplished through the information contained in the earlier chapters), before enlightening me as to some of His other attributes so foreign to our way of thinking. For this same reason, I ask you to read this book in order. If you have not already read all the preceding chapters, please do so before starting here.

As you continue, be aware that man will never totally understand God, at least not in this life. For us to totally understand God, we would have to become totally like God. (What would it require to teach a monkey all about human beings? How could we get them to understand our knowledge, education, creativity, art, music, technology, languages, desires, emotions, relationships, values, cultures, or our worship of God? The answer is, “We couldn’t!” The only way a monkey could ever understand a human being would be to become just like a human being.) So it is with us and God. We clearly have a much better chance of understanding God than a monkey does a human being, because we have been created in God’s image for the purpose of having a Father and child relationship with Him. He is still so far beyond us, though, that there are just some things which we are going to have to accept, without any expectation of a full understanding. Keeping this in mind, let’s begin.

A. GOD IS A PERSON!

The first aspect we need to understand about God is that He is a person. He does not have a physical body, like humans whom He has created, but He is a living, thinking, experiencing, and doing being, who has a personality, a will, desires, and emotions. He is capable of doing everything that His creation can do. The One who created sight, sound, touch, taste, and smell, who gave us the ability to laugh, cry, desire, to feel compassion, affection, joy, excitement, sadness, disgust, and anger is capable of doing and/or experiencing all of these same things Himself. (He does not, however, feel fear--an emotion which came to humanity with the introduction of sin.) He is also one with whom you could have a totally intellectual conversation in any language spoken by man.

And God spoke all these words: I am the LORD your God, who brought you out of Egypt, out of the land of slavery. You shall have no other gods before me. . . . for I, the Lord your God, am a jealous God, . . .
Exodus 20:1-3,5

This is in direct contrast to one of Satan’s lies which says that God is not a person but rather an impersonal force, which is in and is a part of all things (ki, chi, prana, the force, life force, etc).

B. GOD IS THREE PERSONS!

More than just being “a” person, however, God is actually “three persons”--Father, Son, and Holy Spirit. Yes, He is only “one God” (singular), but within this one God are three separate parts--three totally distinct personalities. (Think of a tree: It has different parts--roots, trunk, limbs, and leaves--each with a different name and a different function, but still it is only one tree.)

Hear, O Israel: The LORD our God, the LORD is one. Deuteronomy 6:4

Then God said, “Let us make man in our image, in our likeness . . . So God created man in his own image, in the image of God he created them . . . Genesis 1:26,27

Who has established all the ends of the earth? What is His name, and the name of his son? Proverbs 30:4

Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. Matthew 28:19-20

C. GOD IS MASCULINE!

Notice also that God is “Father,” God is “Son,” and the Holy Spirit is “Him;” but God is not “mother, daughter, or her.” God is masculine!

This, then, is how you should pray: “Our Father in heaven . . . Matthew 6:9

Who has established all the ends of the earth? What is his name, and the name of his son? Proverbs 30:4

And I will ask the Father, and he will give you another Counselor to be with you forever— the Spirit of truth. The world cannot accept him, because it neither sees him nor knows him. But you know him, for he lives with you and will be in you. John 14:16,17

Another of Satan’s strategies is, after having led a man to be very unloving and uncaring toward his wife and children, to then turn around and tell them that a “Father God” would be the same way. If, therefore, they are in need of love and compassion, they will have a better chance of finding it in a “mother earth,” some type of female goddess, or even a statue of Mary (the mother of Jesus, who is now in heaven and cannot interact with us).

Let no one be found among you who . . . consults the dead. Anyone who does these things is detestable to the LORD, and because of these detestable practices the LORD your God will drive out those nations before you. Deuteronomy 18:10-12

Don’t believe this ridiculous lie. God has more love and compassion than any being He has created!

D. GOD IS SPIRIT!

God is also spirit. Like the angels whom He has created (and like a human being immediately after death), God exists without a physical body. He is an immaterial being--a being whom we cannot see with our eyes, feel with our hands, nor experience with any of our five physical senses.

God is spirit, and his worshipers must worship in spirit and in truth. John 4:24

E. GOD IS INFINITE AND OMNIPRESENT!

Unlike people and angels, however, God is not limited to a particular space; He is infinite and omnipresent! He is everywhere at once, and He has no boundaries.

But will God really dwell on earth? The heavens, even the highest heaven cannot contain you. 1 Kings 8:27

Where can I go from your Spirit? Where can I flee from your presence? If I go up to the heavens, you are there; if I make my bed in the depths, you are there. Psalm 139:7,8

This means that the Lord does not have to choose where He is going to be. He can be up in heaven, here on earth, and inside the body of every Christian, all at the same time.

You, however, are controlled not by the sinful nature but by the Spirit, if the Spirit of God lives in you. And if anyone does not have the Spirit of Christ, he does not belong to Christ. Romans 8:9

(I believe that the only place where God is not present is inside the body of a non-Christian--residing with the spirit of someone who has not accepted Him.) This means that if we go for a walk, we walk through God; if we fly in a plane, we fly through God; and if we move our arm, we move it through God.

God understands that this can be difficult to conceptualize, thus, He gave me the following analogy:

But the Counselor, the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in my name, will teach you all things and remind you of everything I have said to you. John 14:26

Picture a body of water, an ocean for example. Living within this body of water are fish, living and swimming and spending their time. There are regular fish which can be seen and jellyfish which can escape visual detection. Now, imagine that these regular fish are people, the jellyfish are angels and demons, and the water is God. A regular fish cannot see the water, just as we cannot see God. In its limited knowledge, it may not even know that the water is there. It is still there, however, whether fish believe it or not (as are gravity, air, magnetism, electrical currents, radiation, ultra violet light, and sound waves with frequencies over 20,000 hertz)! The Bible tells us that, like fish in a body of water, we live and move and have our being inside of God.

For in him we live and move and have our being. Acts 17:28

The Bible also tells us that when a person accepts Jesus as Lord and Savior, the Holy Spirit comes to reside with their spirit inside their physical body.

And I will ask the Father, and he will give you another Counselor to be with you forever— the Spirit of truth. The world cannot accept him, because it neither sees him nor knows him. But you know him, for he lives with you and will be in you. . . . On that day you will realize that I am in my father, and you are in

me, and I am in you. John 14:16,17,20

It also says that anyone who does not have God living on the inside (like a fish without water flowing through it) is dead--“spiritually dead.”

He who has the Son has life; he who does not have the Son of God does not have life. 1 John 5:12

God also understands the problem with us (finite, material beings) trying to relate to Him (an infinite spirit) as our Father. This is one of the reasons He became human, to show us what He is like.

Jesus answered: “Don't you know me, Philip, even after I have been among you such a long time? Anyone who has seen me has seen the Father.” John 14:9

This is also one of the reasons He has given us the Bible. It not only teaches us all about life, death, and eternity, it teaches us about Him. Both the Bible and Jesus are referred to as the “Word of God” (the “Message of God”).

So Paul stayed for a year and a half, teaching the word of God Acts 18.11

In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was with God in the beginning. Through him all things were made; without him nothing was made that has been made. . . . The Word became flesh and made his dwelling among us. John 1:1-3,14

They are His messages to us, to show us what He is like, so we can relate to Him in love.

It's interesting to note that even though God is an infinite spirit--boundless and invisible--He can and has manifested Himself visually (apart from becoming human).

“We are doomed to die!” he said to his wife. “We have seen God!” Judges 13.22

I'm also extremely happy to say that we will be able to see Him in heaven.

Blessed are the pure in heart, for they will see God. Matthew 5:8

He has not, however, allowed any human being--while living on this planet--to see Him in His complete glory, for the Bible says that no one may do this and live.

But,” he said, “you cannot see my face, for no one may see me and live.” Exodus 33:20

F. GOD IS LIGHT.

The Bible also says that God is "light" (i.e., comparable to the effect that a light bulb has when it is turned on). There is really no other way to say this nor a more feasible way to explain it. Nor can it be simplified by suggesting that God is a being of electromagnetic radiation (light as we know it), as electromagnetic radiation is something He created. For this reason, this aspect of God's being is something we can acknowledge but will have to wait to understand.

. . . God is light; in him there is no darkness at all. 1 John 1:5

There he was transfigured before them. His face shone like the sun, and his clothes became as white as the light. Matthew 17:2

I saw that from what appeared to be his waist up he looked like glowing metal, as if full of fire, and that from there down he looked like fire; and brilliant light surrounded him. Ezekiel 1:27

The city does not need the sun or the moon to shine on it, for the glory of God gives it light, and the Lamb is its lamp.Revelation 21:23

Regarding this aspect of the Lord's being, an interesting phenomenon occurred each time He spoke face to face with his servant Moses. (Moses was the one to whom He gave the Ten Commandments, and who led the Israelites out of Egypt.) Each time God would speak to him, Moses' face would also shine like a light.

The LORD would speak to Moses face to face, as a man speaks with his friend. Exodus 33:11

When Moses came down from Mount Sinai with the two tablets of the Testimony in his hands, he was not aware that his face was radiant because he had spoken with the LORD. When Aaron and all the Israelites saw Moses, his face was radiant, and they were afraid to come near him. Exodus 34:29,30

G. GOD IS ALL SEEING!

Through understanding that God is omnipresent--that "in Him we live and move and have our being"--it is a simple step to the understanding that He would also be "all seeing"--that nothing can ever happen which is hidden from His view. (For what can a fish do which is not exposed to the water?)

Where can I go from your Spirit? Where can I flee from your presence? If I go up to the heavens, you are there; if I make my bed in the depths, you are there. Psalm 139:7,8

H. GOD IS ALL KNOWING!

What is not so easy to understand, however, is that God is also "all knowing." He knows everything there is to know about everything there is to know.

Great is our Lord and mighty in power; his understanding has no limit. Psalm 147:5

This not only includes knowing every intricate detail from the past and the present, He knows everything there is to know about the future.

Jesus answered, "I tell you, Peter, before the rooster crows today, you will deny three times that you know me." Luke 22:34

In order to truly grasp this, let's consider His knowledge in regard to a future event in each one of our lives (assuming that we will not be raptured out): God knows everything there is to know about our coming physical death.

All the days ordained for me were written in your book before one of them came to be. Psalm 139:16

He knows when it's going to happen, where it's going to happen, and what will be the cause. He knows the thoughts and emotions we will experience,

. . . for the Lord searches every heart and understands every motive behind the thoughts. 1 Chronicles 28:9

the last feelings we will receive from our bodies, and the number of hairs we will have on our head.

And even the very hairs of your head are all numbered. Matthew 10:30

He knows how it will be reported, the eulogy which will be said at our funeral, and the effect it will

have on our family. He knows where our bodies will be buried, the epitaph which will be written on our tombstone, and the effect we will have on the soil.

I. GOD IS ALL POWERFUL!

God is also all powerful! “*For in six days the LORD made the heavens and the earth, the sea, and all that is in them --- and the rest was as easy as pie!*” This verse (taken from Exodus 20.11) doesn’t really include the part “and the rest was as easy as pie,” but, if anything, this is an understatement. When we truly grasp the fact that in only six days God created the entire universe--all time, energy, space, and matter (quarks, protons, neutrons, electrons, atoms, molecules, cells, plants, animals, people, planets, moons, stars, galaxies)--as well as all of the systems by which it operates,

In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was with God in the beginning. Through him all things were made; without him nothing was made that has been made. . . . The Word became flesh and made his dwelling among us. John 1:1-3,14

then we should have absolutely no trouble accepting the fact that He is also able to control His creation. (Being surprised by a miracle of God is about as logical as being surprised by a house builder who fixes a house.) I personally believe that it takes infinitely more knowledge, wisdom, and power to simply keep the universe up and running than it could ever take to perform some isolated miracle somewhere. So, with the understanding that God is all powerful, that He can easily control the universe which He has created and maintains,

For by him all things were created: things in heaven and on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or powers or rulers or authorities; all things were created for him and by him. He is before all things, and in him all things hold together. Colossians 1:16,17

let’s take a look at some of the things which He has done with it.

1. WHAT GOD HAS DONE WITH WATER.

He has changed it to wine, changed it to blood, stood it up like a wall, walked on it, floated an axe head on it, caused it to pour out of a rock, and used it to flood the earth.

Changed to wine (John 2:9) / Changed to blood (Exodus 7:20) / Stood up like wall (Exodus 14:21,22) / Walked on it (John 6:19) / Floated an axe head on it (2 Kings 6:5,6) / Poured from rock (Numbers 20:11) / Flooded the earth (Genesis 7:18-20)

2. WHAT GOD HAS DONE WITH THE LAND.

He has blessed it with fruitfulness, cursed it with thorns, dried it up, shaken it, and opened it to swallow people. He also used a forest to destroy an army.

Blessed it (Genesis 2:9) / Cursed it (Genesis 3:17,18) / Dried it up (1 Kings 17:1) / Shaken it (Matthew 27:51) / Opened it (Numbers 16:31) / Forest destroys (2 Samuel 18:8)

3. WHAT GOD HAS DONE WITH LIGHT & THE EARTH'S ROTATION.

He has stopped the earth's rotation, causing a certain day in the past to last approximately forty-eight hours. He has reversed the earth's rotation, causing the sun to go backward relative to its normal "path." He has kept the sun from illuminating specific areas of a kingdom while allowing it to light other areas. He is also going to cause the sun to scorch people during the tribulation.

Stopped progression (*Joshua 10:13*) / Made it go backward (*Isaiah 38:8*) / Kept it from lighting area (*Exodus 10:21,22*) / Scorch people (*Revelation 16:8*)

Various cultures have legends which seem to be based upon a 'stopping of the sun.' There is a Greek myth of Apollo's son, Phaethon, who disrupted the sun's course for a day. The New Zealand Maori people have a myth about how their hero Maui slowed the sun before it rose. The Mexican Annals of Cuauhtitlan (the history of the empire of Culhuacan and Mexico) records a night that continued for an extended time. [19A]

It's important to note that God created light (electromagnetic radiation) before He created a light source (the sun and stars).

Light created on first day of creation week. (*Genesis 1:3-5*) / Sun and stars created on fourth day of creation week (*Genesis 1:14-19*)

We should not be surprised, therefore, that He is able to exercise control over it without regard to its source. Remember, also, that heaven has no need of a "sun," as it is lighted by the glory of God.

The city does not need the sun or the moon to shine on it, for the glory of God gives it light, and the Lamb is its lamp. Revelation 21:23

There He was transfigured before them. His face shown like the sun, and His clothes became as white as the light. Matthew 17:2

4. WHAT GOD HAS DONE WITH THE ELEMENTS.

He has created storms and stopped storms. He has rained down fire from the sky, shot it out of a rock, consumed people with it, and protected others from its effect. (He is also going to consume the present earth with fire before He makes the new earth.) He has rained down burning sulfur destroying cities, and has sent hail as judgment on nations and armies.

Created storm (*Jonah 1:4*) / Stopped storm (*Matthew 8:26*) / Fire from the sky (*2 Chronicles 7:1*) / Fire from rock (*Judges 6:21*) / Consumed people with fire (*2 Kings 1:10*) / Protected people in fire (*Daniel 3:26,27*) / Consume earth with fire (*2 Peter 3:10*) / Burning sulfur (*Genesis 19:24*) / Sent hail as judgment (*Exodus 9:25*) / Uses hail against armies (*Job 38:22*)

5. WHAT GOD HAS DONE WITH ANIMALS.

He has multiplied insects and frogs as plagues on a nation and sent hornets to drive others out. He has sent bears to maul people, snakes to bite people, and a fish to save a man's life. He has sent

birds to bring food, birds to become food, and fish to overfill nets. He changed a stick to a snake, enabled a donkey to talk, and kept lions from eating a man. He also sent at least two of every kind of land animal on board Noah's ark--before He flooded the earth--and this included dinosaurs. (You will see how totally feasible this was in the second half of this book.)

Plague of insects (*Exodus 8:17*) / Plague of frogs (*Exodus 8:6*) / Hornets (*Joshua 24:12*) / Bears (*Kings 2:24*) / Snakes (*Numbers 21:6*) / Fish saves a man (*Jonah 1:17*) / Birds bring food (*Kings 17:6*) / Birds come as food (*Exodus 16:12,13*) / Fish in nets (*John 21:6*) / Stick to snake (*Exodus 7:10*) / Donkey speaks (*Numbers 22:28*) / Lions do not eat man (*Daniel 6:22*) / Animals enter ark (*Genesis 7:8,9*)

6. WHAT GOD HAS DONE WITH PEOPLE.

Before looking at some of the things God has done *with* people, let's review what He has done *for* people — in addition to giving us life, love, the beauty and provision of creation, and an invitation to live forever in heaven. He stepped into our world to be ridiculed, scorned, spit upon, slapped, punched in the face, pierced with thorns, beat with a staff, shredded with a whip, and to be physically nailed to a cross--where He hung until He died--to take the justly-required punishment for all that we have done wrong.

Ridiculed, beaten with staff, spit, thorns (*Matthew 27:29,30*) / Ridiculed, scorned (*Matthew 27:39-42*) / Spit, punched, slapped (*Matthew 26:67*) / Whipped (*Matthew 27:26*) / Nailed to cross (*John 20:25*)

What God has done *with* People: With the exception of eight people, He destroyed the entire population of the ancient world, which had become totally, continuously, relentlessly evil.

The LORD saw how great man's wickedness on the earth had become, and that every inclination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil all the time. The LORD was grieved that he had made man on the earth, and his heart was filled with pain. So the Lord said, "I will wipe mankind whom I have created, from the face of the earth. . . " Genesis 6:5-7

He later caused the (replenished) human race to speak different languages in order to end an organized and prideful, humanity-wide rebellion, thus avoiding having to bring another judgment.

So the LORD scattered them from there over all the earth, and they stopped building the city. That is why it was called Babel—because there the LORD confused the language of the whole world. Genesis 11:8,9

He has raised up nations, brought them down, and used them to destroy each other. He has destroyed armies, caused others to attack and destroy themselves, and killed every firstborn male in ancient Egypt. He has struck people with disease, cured people of disease, brought dead people to life, and turned a woman into a pillar of salt.

Raised up nations (*Genesis 12:2*) / Brought down nations (*Jeremiah 25:32,33*) / Used nations to destroy each other (*Habakkuk 1:6*) / Killed armies (*Exodus 14:27,28 & 2 Kings 19:35*) / Caused armies to attack and destroy themselves (*Judges 7:22 & 2 Chronicles 20:17-24*) / Killed every firstborn male (*Exodus 12:29*) / Struck with diseases (*Numbers 12:9,10*) / Healed of diseases (*Matthew 4:23*) / Brought person back to life (*Luke 8:53-55*) / Pillar of salt (*Genesis 19:26*)

God has also dealt with some prideful kings in incredible ways. He humbled the most powerful and prideful king of the ancient world, King Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon, by giving him the mind of an animal for a period of seven years. Nebuchadnezzar was actually made to eat grass like a cow, and took on some of the physical characteristics of a bird. (He was restored to both his senses and his

position--a much humbler man.)

Immediately what had been said about Nebuchadnezzar was fulfilled. He was driven away from people and ate grass like cattle. His body was drenched with the dew of heaven until his hair grew like the feathers of an eagle and his nails like the claws of a bird. Daniel 4:33

God also struck another extremely prideful king down, causing him to be eaten by worms and then to die.

Immediately, because Herod did not give praise to God, an angel of the Lord struck him down, and he was eaten by worms and died. Acts 12:23

7. WHAT GOD DOES WITH SATAN AND ALL DEMONS.

He sovereignly uses them to accomplish His will, and when He's finished with them, He's going to consign them to eternity in hell. This isn't going to end like some adventure movie, either, where God ultimately faces Satan in the final showdown. He will simply use one of His angels to do the job.

Uses them (Judges 9:23) / Send them to hell (Matthew 25:41) / One angel binds Satan (Revelation 20:1)

J. GOD IS ETERNAL!

Another thing the Bible tells us about God is that He is eternal--ageless and timeless, without beginning and without end. It does not explain the "how" or the "why" of the being of God. It simply says that He is, He has always been, and He will always be.

Before the mountains were born or you brought forth the earth and the world, from everlasting to everlasting you are God. Psalm 90:2

Any problems we have being able to fully grasp the fact that something can exist "beyond time" come not only from the fact that we had a beginning, but from living in a world constrained by time. Everything physical (everything we can experience with our five senses), had a beginning and will have an end. God, on the other hand, is not only beyond time, He created it. **Yes, God created time!** He created the stars and the planets and then used them to create time. He set these celestial bodies in space, determined the speed at which they would rotate, the path (orbit) which they would travel, and the velocity at which they would do it, and set them in motion. He then said that this movement would constitute time. One rotation of the earth would be a day, and one trip by the earth around the sun would be a year. He also orchestrated this movement to bring about the seasons.

And God said, "Let there be lights in the expanse of the sky to separate the day from the night. and let them serve as signs to mark seasons and days and years," Genesis 1:14

Later, after Adam sinned, He also determined the length of time (the number of planetary cycles) that man--as well as everything else--should live. So, while we may not be able to fully grasp the concept of timelessness, we can at least understand that time is simply another part of God's creation.

K. GOD IS RIGHTEOUS!

The rest of this chapter may seem to be more about God's character than about His being--more about what He does than about what He is--but it's really not. When we truly gain an accurate understanding of God's nature, we come to the realization that most of His attributes are traits, not choices. For instance, the Bible tells us that He is righteous--pure, sinless, eternally good, unable to accept, commit, or even be tempted by evil. It doesn't say that He "acts" righteous, it says that He "is" righteous. Describing God as righteous is like describing a person as tall. It's not how He acts, it's what He is.

The LORD is righteous in all his ways and loving toward all he has made. Psalm 145:17

When tempted, no one should say, "God is tempting me." For God cannot be tempted by evil, nor does he tempt anyone; . . . James 1:13

L. GOD IS LOVE!

The Bible also tells us that "God is love." Notice again that it doesn't say "He chooses to love," rather "He is love."

Whoever does not love does not know God, because God is love. 1 John 4:8

Before we can truly understand this statement, we must first have an accurate definition of the word "love." We, at least in the United States, have really distorted the meaning of this word. When we hear it spoken or even look it up in a dictionary, the first thing that comes to mind is an emotion--"a feeling." We are also disadvantaged by the limitations of the English language, as there are actually three ancient Greek words which we translate "love" (Agape, Eros, and Phileo). God's definition is this: He says love is patient and kind. It does not envy or boast. It is not proud, rude, or self seeking. It is not easily angered and does not remember offenses. It does not delight in evil, but rejoices in truth. It always protects, trusts, hopes, and preserves. This is not emotion, this is action! Love is a way of living, of being, of treating others, and this is what God is!

Love is patient, love is kind. It does not envy, it does not boast, it is not proud. It is not rude, it is not self-seeking, it is not easily angered, it keeps no record of wrongs. Love does not delight in evil but rejoices with the truth. It always protects, always trusts, always hopes, always perseveres! Love never fails. 1 Corinthians 13:4-8.

[This is one of the problems facing marriages today. Many people base their commitments upon emotions, thinking that love is a feeling. When the euphoria dies, so does the marriage. God tells us to base our marriages upon obedience to Him and the emotions will follow. If they don't, we can ask Him for help.]

'For this reason a man will leave his father and mother and be united to his wife, and the two will become one flesh'? So they are no longer two, but one. Therefore what God has joined together, let man not separate. Matthew 19:5,6

M. GOD IS JUST!

N. GOD IS MERCIFUL!

I have combined these two traits into this one section for an incredibly important reason. This combination is the key to life! It is the mystery of the ages, the combination which resulted in Almighty God becoming a human being to die on a cross to save humanity!

Now to him who is able to establish you by my gospel and the proclamation of Jesus Christ, according to the revelation of the mystery hidden for long ages past, . . . Romans 16:25

When the Bible tells us that God is just, it is saying that He is totally and perfectly fair in all of His dealings with mankind, as well as with angels and demons. There is absolutely nothing that He has ever, will ever, or can ever do which is unjust, and this includes judging the human race.

He is the Rock, his works are perfect, and all his ways are just. A faithful God who does no wrong, upright and just is he. Deuteronomy 32:4

God absolutely must judge fairly. For some people who have “lived a pretty good life,” this may appear to be a reason for rejoicing, knowing that they have done much more good than bad. In reality, it means that God absolutely must punish their sin. What we need to understand is that in order for God to remain just, He must not only avoid committing any type of injustice Himself, He must correct (which means “punish”) all that He sees. To more easily explain this point, let’s examine how this same condition is true even when applied to human law and a human judge.

*** Imagine for a moment that one of your neighbors is a judge and your neighborhood is in his jurisdiction. This means any crimes committed on your street will be tried in his court. (Actually, for the purpose of this analogy, we are going to imagine that he is the only judge available and he unconditionally presides over all cases, regardless of the circumstances.) Now imagine that a crime has been committed — against you. Somebody has broken into your house and robbed it, and the judge saw who did it. He (the judge) now has a legal, moral, and professional obligation to report this crime and to do all that he can to see that justice is served. Even if he were not a judge, he would still be legally and morally responsible for reporting it as well as for testifying about it in court. If he fails to do this--if he knowingly and willingly allows this wrong to go unpunished--then he will literally be promoting injustice and will become an accomplice to this crime. This is called “aiding and abetting a criminal,” and a person who does this becomes criminally unjust himself.

This is how it is with God. He absolutely cannot allow any sin (any injustice) to go unpunished, or He becomes a party to that injustice and, thus, becomes sinful Himself. (This, of course, will never happen!) So, He must punish them all--every sin which has ever been committed. He cannot allow the smallest one to be overlooked. (Asking God to overlook a single sin, in the otherwise perfect life of an individual, would be like asking a police officer to overlook the stealing of one item because “everything else had been paid for.”) For the human race, this judgment should mean eternal separation from God and eternal punishment in hell. God cannot spend eternity with injustice--with unpunished sin. Justness cannot exist with injustice any more than dryness can exist with water.

But your iniquities have separated you from your God; your sins have hidden his face from you, so that he will not hear. Isaiah 59:2

He will punish those who do not know God and do not obey the gospel of our Lord Jesus. They will be punished with everlasting destruction and shut out from the presence of the Lord . . . 2 Thessalonians

1:8,9

So, understanding that God is “just” and that He absolutely must punish all sin, let’s now take a look at His other trait--“mercy” (His desire to forgive us)--and see how He is wonderfully able to apply both of them at the same time.

For the LORD your God is a merciful God; . . . Deuteronomy 4:31

In order to do this, let’s go back again to our story.

*** It has been about a month since the burglary. The judge did everything according to the law, and the criminal was both identified and arrested. The time has now come for the trial, and we are about to begin. We are at this point, however, going to enact a major change in the story. You are no longer the victim; you are the criminal! You are the one who broke into the other person’s house and stole their possessions. You are the one now standing before the judge, subject to his authority to declare you guilty, and to determine your punishment.

How did you get here?

You had at some time in the past rejected your father’s provision, because receiving his provision required obeying his rules, and you tried to make it on your own. You attempted living for yourself, doing things your own way, and providing for your own needs. **It didn’t work!** Many things happened which were beyond your control, and many things you didn’t expect. In addition, you made some mistakes, bent some rules, and broke some laws. And now, here you are: a law breaker ready to be judged. You wish you could go back somehow, turn back the clock and start over. You would really do it differently this time, accepting your father’s authority and provision and becoming what he wanted you to be. How great that would be, how wonderful, but it’s not reality. You can’t go back and you know it. You are here, the time is now, and you are facing judgment, knowing you are as guilty as sin. The judge reads the charges: “You are charged with injustice and unrighteousness!,” and then asks, “How do you plead?” (Do you say you are guilty or innocent?) You know he saw you robbing the house, so it would be utterly foolish to lie. Also, you are tired of all the mess, tired of the rebellion, the self-centeredness, of doing things your own way and knowing you’ll never make it. You tell him, “I am guilty!” You also tell him how sorry you are for the way you have lived and you really want to do it right from now on. The judge bangs his gavel on the desk and proclaims, “Guilty: Ten-Thousand Dollars or Ten Years in Prison!” He asks if you have the money. (Naturally, of course, you don’t. If you did, you wouldn’t have been robbing houses.) The judge then does the most amazing thing. He stands up, walks over to the bailiff, and pays the ten-thousand dollars for you. He pays your fine so you won’t have to go to prison.

Why? Why would he do this? Why would this judge offer such an incredible sacrifice for you? The reason — because “He” is your father! He absolutely must punish your sin in order to remain just and to retain the right to remain Judge. Yet, He can also be the one to suffer. He can be the one who pays the price for what you did wrong.

This is what God did for us on the cross! He stepped into time and space and became a human being in order to die for our sins. He suffered for all the unjust things which we have ever done, or ever will do, so we won’t have to pay the penalty ourselves.

The Word became flesh and made his dwelling among us. John 1:14

He was delivered over to death for our sins and was raised to life for our justification. Romans 4:25

He (pure, sinless perfection) is also the only one who could do it, as every one of us have sinned and

we are all guilty.

*God made him who had no sin to be sin for us, so that in him we might become the righteousness of God.
2 Corinthians 5:21*

We are all subject to eternal punishment in hell and the only one who could possibly take our punishment for us is someone who is not subject to the same judgment. A person sentenced to death or to life in prison cannot serve another's sentence for him. He is already there for his own crime.

But you know that he appeared so that he might take away our sins. And in him is no sin. 1 John 3:5

So here it is — the method of forgiveness. God has paid the penalty for our sins and now offers it to us free.

For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord. Romans 6:23

All we have to do is accept it. All we have to do is receive it. We simply have to confess our sins (admit to Him that we have broken His laws and are in need of His forgiveness),

If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just and will forgive us our sins and purify us from all unrighteousness. 1 John 1:9

turn from them (accept His authority over our lives and start living the way He wants us to live),

Repent, then, and turn to God, so that your sins may be wiped out, that times of refreshing may come from the Lord, . . . Acts 3:19

and receive this free and wonderful gift. If we fail to do this, then there is no one to pay for our sins except us, no one to keep us out of hell.

So do it! Become a forgiven child of God instead of a sinner condemned to hell! Make Jesus your Lord, God, and Savior instead of your Judge, Jury, and Executioner. It's your choice. Do it!!! You will be forever happy if you do, and forever sorry if you don't.

There is only one Lawgiver and Judge, the one who is able to save and destroy. James 4:12

Oh, and if you're wondering how God feels about us, having to suffer for all of our evil, let's go back and finish our story according to the way God says it would end if He were the judge. [This story is actually a combination of two different stories: (1) an actual court case, involving a judge, his daughter, and a traffic ticket, and (2) a parable which Jesus told called "The Prodigal Son" (Luke 15.11-32), designed specifically to answer this question.]

*** Your Father has just paid your fine and ordered that your case be closed permanently, never to be re-opened for any reason, ever!

For I will forgive their wickedness and will remember their sins no more. Jeremiah 31:34

You have now stepped out into the hall and are waiting to talk to Him before He goes back to his office. You are wondering what He's thinking; how He's going to react. Is He mad? Disgusted? Is He ready to pound you with an I-told-you-so, the way He hit the desk with that gavel? Does He want you back home again? As you sit there wondering, He suddenly steps around the corner and begins excitedly searching the hall for you. As soon as He sees you, He literally runs down the hall, throws His arms around you, and hugs you with all of His might. There is such excitement in His eyes! He then turns to His secretary and tells her, "Cancel all my appointments for the day; my child has come home!" He then joyfully introduces you to her. He then tells her to take you to the mall and buy you the best suit of clothes that you can find. He also tells her to call the catering company to order "their

best meal” and then to call all your friends and family and invite them to “One Major Homecoming Celebration!”

*When he came to his senses . . . So he got up and went to his father. But while he was still a long way off, his father saw him and was filled with compassion for him; he ran to his son, threw his arms around him and kissed him. . . . But the father said to his servants, ‘Quick! Bring the best robe and put it on him. Put a ring on his finger and sandals on his feet. Bring the fattened calf and kill it. Let’s have a feast and celebrate. For this son of mine was dead and is alive again; he was lost and is found.’
Luke 15:17,20,22,23,24*

O. GOD NEVER CHANGES!

This is God! This is what He is like according to His own Word and as verified by all my experience. He is absolutely the most loving father and the most wonderful friend you will ever find, and He will be like this forever. Nothing about God will ever change nor ever end.

I the LORD do not change. Malachi 3:6

Unfortunately, your opportunity to accept Him will. It is here and now, but you have no guarantee about tomorrow. But why would you wait? Why would you put off for even a day, life the way it is meant to be lived, love from the Source of it all, and the comfort of knowing that if you die tonight, you will still be with Him tomorrow, and the next day, and the next day, and forever?

Chapter A-14

CONCLUSION

Well, here you have it: the explanation of life and the revelation of the God who created it--of the God who created all. He eternally existed, complete, perfect, and sufficient all by Himself, but He decided that He wanted children. He, therefore, created the human race to bring us into the family of God. He has given us life, and as is necessary for children to exist, given us free-wills so that our entry into His family (our acceptance of His offer) could be by choice. Sadly, this means that rejecting Him must also be a possibility.

He didn't make the decision difficult, however. He created us with all kinds of needs--very insufficient and in need of His help--so that accepting Him would be beneficial in every way. Subsequently, He has shown us that He is not only ready, willing, and able to meet these needs, He wants to give us the desires of our hearts (the ones that will truly bless us). And He wants to do it throughout eternity! Look around, look at all that He has done and the reasons for it! He created an incredible universe--incredibly large, yet meticulously intricate--to show us that He is both big enough and involved enough to help. He made it very pleasing to our senses and gave us the senses to enjoy it, to show us He really does care. He stepped into human flesh to show us His love, to help us relate, and to die on the cross for our sins. And now, He has presented His offer. He has told us about heaven, showed us the way, paid for our passage, even offered rewards, and promised never to leave us nor change. He has also put the whole blessed story in a single book so we don't have to go searching all over. He has done His part: everything needed to enable us and everything possible to encourage us to accept His wonderful offer.

Now it's up to us; it's our turn to move. We can accept our Creator and the reason for our existence and live each moment in the light of truth, eternity, and of the precious gift of salvation. Or we can in very shortsighted foolishness live for the temporary things of this world. We can call upon the love, guidance, and power of Almighty God to carry us through this life and into heaven, or we can, in utter lunacy, choose to ignore reality and try to make it on our own (and be forever sorry).

Satan is also here, defining and presenting us with the counter offer of "live for now, live for ourselves, and be our own gods." Both the world, and our sinful human nature want us to take it. But it doesn't work! Living for ourselves never brings the lasting joy or happiness that it (or Satan) promises, nor will it keep us from burning in hell. God's offer includes freedom from guilt and from the fear of death and judgment, power over sin and Satan, and a place of royalty in the eternal family of God! This is lasting joy and happiness! So compare the offers, compare the costs, and make your decision.

Our mighty King is coming, and He's going to own the land, and it looks like it may be soon. Whether by love (getting us to accept Him), or by patience (waiting for death and judgment to pass), He's going to own it all, and everyone of us will be bowing before Him. Our little kingdoms are passing away and soon His will be the only one left standing. What we each have to decide is where

we will be at that time. Be smart. Be in His!

See you there!

For God so loved the world that he gave his one and only Son, that whoever believes in him shall not perish but have eternal life. John 3:16

PART – B

**THE
THEORY
OF
EVOLUTION**

VS

**THE AWESOMENESS
OF
GOD**

Chapter B-1

WHAT YOU ARE ABOUT TO EXPERIENCE

For the time will come when men will not put up with sound doctrine. Instead, to suit their own desires, they will gather around them a great number of teachers to say what their itching ears want to hear. They will turn their ears away from the truth and turn aside to myths. 2 Timothy 4:3,4

After reading the title of the second half of this book, you may have any number of questions. Without a thorough understanding of the “Creation vs. Evolution” conflict, you may be asking, “What in the world is this all about?” On the other hand, you may clearly understand both the immense significance and controversy surrounding this subject but have been led to believe that science either supports Evolution or disagrees with the Bible. In any case, you should find the following information very enlightening. In addition to simply explaining what the various fields of science show about the origin of life and the universe, this book also reveals many amazing things about God, mankind, and the world in which we live, which are generally unknown. For example: The earth is approximately 6,000 years old and it previously functioned like a giant greenhouse. The first people on earth were the smartest; they were using electricity 4,500 years ago and hang-gliders 2,300 years ago. The complexity of a human cell exceeds the complexity of a city. The Bible describes both the largest and the most fearsome dinosaurs which ever lived and there are reports of dinosaurs currently living in the Congo. The remains of Noah’s ark have been visited several times in recent years. You can see a fossilized bowling hat in a museum in New Zealand. Nazi Germany used the Theory of Evolution to justify the murder of 11 million people. The United States is experiencing the initial stages of God’s judgment and the next world-wide judgment is quickly approaching.

From the title, you can also tell that I am not presenting this information from an objective point of view. I can’t! The Theory of Evolution says that Almighty God--my Lord, Savior, and absolute best Friend--doesn’t exist. Both He and I find this somewhat amusing.

The fool says in his heart, “There is no God.” Psalm 14:1

Why do the nations conspire and the peoples plot in vain? The kings of the earth take their stand and the rulers gather together against the LORD and against His Anointed One. “Let us break their chains,” they say, “and throw off their fetters.” The One enthroned in heaven laughs; the Lord scoffs at them. Psalm 2:1-4

What you also need to understand is that no scientist (Creationist or Evolutionist) has ever been unbiased about this subject either. They can’t be! A scientist who is a true Evolutionist (an atheist) will not even consider the possibility the world might have been created, or he is no longer a true Evolutionist. A scientist who is a Creationist cannot even consider the possibility the world might not

have been created, or he is no longer a Creationist. These biases affect everything scientists do or say, whether they admit it or not. They affect the way they conduct experiments, consider evidence, and greatly limit the possible conclusions they may draw. In addition, there is one more thing about scientists which needs to be emphasized. They are not infallible. They are imperfect human beings, who are limited in knowledge and do make mistakes. (In the not too distant past, scientists claimed that a living cell was simple, the earth was flat, and rats and flies grew out of garbage.)

THE THEORY OF EVOLUTION EXPLAINED

A. THE THEORY OF EVOLUTION & THE THEORY OF ORGANIC EVOLUTION

In order to begin this discussion, the first thing we need to do is to define and distinguish between two similar terms: “The Theory of Evolution” and “The Theory of *Organic* Evolution.” When we use the term “The Theory of Evolution,” we are referring to the theorized account of all of history according to the Evolutionists. This extremely broad theory covers the proposed evolutionary origin and development of everything--both “living” (everything from cells and plants to snails and people) and “non-living” (the earth, moon, stars, etc.). It theoretically goes back hundreds of billions of years to a point in time when Evolutionists say the first non-living parts of the universe came into existence. When we use the term “The Theory of *Organic* Evolution,” we are referring to only a portion of this larger theory, limiting our discussion to the theoretical time period and processes having to do with life. This covers (theoretically) a previous 3.5 to 4.6 billion years.

Understanding this distinction is important for a couple of reasons. First of all, most Evolution theory has to do with “Organic Evolution”—with living things. The greatest majority of the things that have been fabricated, taught, believed, and repeated about Evolution have to do with simple life forms supposedly evolving into more complex life forms. Second, Evolution theory regarding the “non-living” is, to a great degree, disconnected from Evolution theory regarding the “living.” In other words, the theory of the evolution of rocks has almost nothing to do with the theory of the evolution of roses and rabbits. This is made most evident by the fact that there have been at least 23 different theories proposed on how our solar system came into existence [5], yet the Theory of Organic Evolution has remained basically unchanged. (The Theory of Organic Evolution has undergone only one major change.)

In this book, only one of the Evolution theories regarding the non-living parts of the universe is addressed. It is known as the “Big Bang Theory”—the most well known and widely accepted of our day. This limitation will not, however, hinder the adequacy of this discussion as the one thing which all Evolution theory has in common is the theme addressed here: Evolution proposes that the universe and all of life began and developed by itself--apart from the sovereign control of a creator.

B. THE BIG BANG THEORY

According to this theory, the universe is the result of an enormous unplanned explosion: the “Big Bang.” According to the Big Bang Evolutionists, something which they have called the “primordial atom” (the size and origin of which are unknown) sat around in whatever we would call pre-space (the location and length of time unknown), when it suddenly blew up (the reason unknown). Some time later, some of the gasses from this (unverifiable) explosion supposedly came together and formed the stars (the method unknown). Later, some of these stars are proposed to have blown up (the reason unknown), and as a result of these subsequent (unverifiable) explosions, all the planets, including the earth, were formed (the method unknown).

Moving on into “Organic Evolution,” the sun then heated up the earth’s surface and supposedly made something come to life.

C. THE THEORY OF ORGANIC EVOLUTION

This theory says that all “advanced” species of life on earth (i.e. plants, animals, and people) have evolved into what they are today from earlier, less highly-developed life forms and ultimately all from the same original one (something called “blue-green algae”). This theory also says that the “original one” lived somewhere between 3.5 to 4.6 billion years ago and came to life as a result of the sun’s energy. In other words, over an incredibly long period of time, an original species of something which somehow began to live began to reproduce. As it did (or so the theory goes), it began to create offspring which were slightly different and more highly developed than itself. This life form’s offspring then supposedly continued this accidental reproduction of more highly developed offspring. As a result of a very large number of these generational changes, we now have the human race as well as all the other life forms on earth.

The proposed mechanism by which this imaginary changing-of-species occurs (the explanation of how algae supposedly evolve into elephants) is where the major change has occurred in Organic Evolution. When this theory was first popularized in our culture (by Charles Darwin in the mid-1800’s), the sun’s energy was not only given credit for creating the first life form, it was also said to be the cause of this supposed evolutionary progress. Darwin said that the sun’s energy caused simple species of life forms to become more complex. If this were true, if the sun caused species to evolve, then no species would remain the same. They would always be changing. This, of course, did not fit the evidence (a relentless problem facing Evolution theory), as all the supposed evolutionary ancestors of modern life were still here. For instance, if reptiles had evolved from amphibians, and amphibians were continually evolving, then why were there 100% amphibians living at the same time as 100% reptiles? Why did every life form on earth fit perfectly into a particular category? Why were all humans 100% human, all snakes 100% snake, all cats 100% cat, all flies 100% fly, and all flowers 100% flower? This theory was formally disproved in 1865 (approximately six years after Darwin proposed it) by a man named Gregor Mendel. Mr. Mendel proved that species were not continually evolving, by demonstrating that inherited characteristics not only recur, they are totally predictable.

Gregor Mendel showed through nine years of experiments that heredity is based on sound mathematical principles that are always true and consistent. He showed that we can mathematically predict how inherited characteristics will affect upcoming generations and it is always consistent, adhering to the mathematical principles, even when cross breeding. This proved that species were not ever changing. [7]

[11]

After Mendel presented this evidence--disproving Darwin's theory--evolutionists quickly came up with an alternative theory. In order to keep the idea alive, they began to claim that the (theoretical) evolutionary progress was the result of a combination of two different factors: "accidental mutations" and "the processes of Natural Selection." Natural Selection is also known as "The Survival of the Fittest."

"Natural Selection" was part of Darwin's original theory. He said that nature, allowing only the strong to survive, moved all of the "continually evolving species" in an ever upward direction.

This new theory said that every once in a while a life form is born with a mutation which makes it superior to the rest of its species. This mutational improvement which theoretically passes down to its descendants not only makes it more viable than the rest of its kind--more able to survive considering the processes of natural selection--it enables it to leave the most descendants. It is said that the mutational improvement either enables the life form to produce more offspring during a particular period of time, or simply allows it to live longer, thus giving it more opportunities to reproduce. In this way, by leaving the majority of the offspring of the species, which are different because of the inherited mutational advantage, the population as a whole changes and improves. Then, with enough of these improvements occurring in sequence, one species of life form gradually changes into an entirely different species. The most publicized claim is that human beings have evolved from ape-like creatures. (This is easier to get people to accept, than telling them that they share a common ancestor with butterflies, Bermuda grass, and the AIDS virus.)

[*** None of the underlined statements in the above paragraph has ever been proven!]

Before continuing, there are a couple of things about Charles Darwin and this theory which are worthy of mention. First of all, Darwin did not invent it. All he did was popularize--by attempting to "fit to science"--a theory which had already been proposed by various other cultures. [2] [28] Second, Darwin was not schooled in science. He was schooled in theology (at Cambridge University in England). [2] This means, of course, that though his scientific knowledge may have been lacking, he knew very well what the Bible teaches, that Jesus--who created heaven and earth--is the only way to get to heaven from earth. Darwin, no doubt, rejected this truth, for he was delighted with the Theory of Evolution. Why? Well, as he put it: It freed him from that damnable teaching that Jesus is the only way to heaven. [18]

Having this information in hand, there are now three things I would like to do: (1), show how blatantly these theories disagree with the Bible, (2) show how extremely dangerous and evil they are, and (3) show how totally incompatible they are with both science and logic.

Chapter B-3

HOW THE THEORY OF EVOLUTION DISAGREES WITH THE BIBLE

Most Christians know there is some disagreement between the Word of God and the Theory of Evolution. What many do not know, however, is the scope of, or the seriousness of the disparity. As you will see below, the two are not only mutually exclusive at a number of points, the Theory of Evolution conflicts with some of the most important doctrines of the Bible.

A. HOW THE UNIVERSE CAME INTO EXISTENCE

*** The Theory of Evolution says, “There is no creator.” It says that the universe exists as a result of a string of chance, random accidents. One part of the theory says that the non-living universe began when a (theoretical) object known as the “Primordial Atom” accidentally blew up (The Big Bang Theory). Another part of the theory says that the sun’s energy heated up the earth’s surface, accidentally causing something to come to life, and that this original life form--through a multitude of subsequent accidents--evolved into all of the life forms which we see on the earth today.

*** The Bible says, “In the beginning, God created the heavens and the earth, the sea and all that is in them.”

In the beginning, God created the heavens and the earth. Genesis 1:1

For in six days the LORD made the heavens and the earth, the sea, and all that is in them, but he rested on the seventh day. Exodus 20:11

Please note that it says “created” (past tense). Creation was complete. Stars “being born” is an unprovable theory.

Thus the heavens and the earth were completed in all their vast array. Genesis 2:1

B. HOW HUMANS CAME INTO EXISTENCE

*** The Theory of Evolution claims that humans have evolved over millions of years from lower life forms including animals.

*** The Bible says that God created Adam (the first man) from the dust of the ground and Eve (the first woman) from Adam’s body. It also says He created all the animals from the dust of the ground, and He

did it on the same day He created Adam.

The LORD God formed the man from the dust of the ground and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life, and the man became a living being. Genesis 2:7

So the LORD God caused the man to fall into a deep sleep; and while he was sleeping, he took one of the man's ribs and closed up the place with flesh. Then the LORD God made a woman from the rib he had taken out of the man, and He brought her to the man. Genesis 2:21,22

Now the LORD God had formed out of the ground all the beasts of the field and all the birds of the air. Genesis 2:19

God made the wild animals according to their kinds, the livestock according to their kinds, and all the creatures that move along the ground according to their kinds. And God saw that it was good. Then God said, "Let us make man in our image," . . . And there was evening, and there was morning—the sixth day. Genesis 1:25,26,31

C. HOW ANIMALS CAME INTO EXISTENCE

*** According to the Theory of Evolution, animals have evolved over billions of years from “lower life forms” and all share the same original ancestor (the very first life form).

*** The Bible says that God created all the different animals over a period of two days (birds and all sea life on day five, and all land animals on day six) out of the soil, and each one a specific kind.

Now the LORD God had formed out of the ground all the beasts of the field and all the birds of the air. Genesis 2:19

So God created the great creatures of the sea and every living and moving thing with which the water teems, according to their kinds, and every winged bird according to its kind. And there was evening, and there was morning—the fifth day. Genesis 1:21,23

God made the wild animals according to their kinds, the livestock according to their kinds, and all the creatures that move along the ground according to their kinds. . . Then God said, "Let us make man in our image," . . . And there was evening, and there was morning—the sixth day. Genesis 1:25,26,31

D. THE AGE OF THE UNIVERSE

*** The Theory of Evolution claims that it took hundreds of billions of years to get the universe, the earth, and life on earth to the developmental stage where they are today.

*** The Bible says that God created the universe in six literal twenty-four hour days,

For in six days the LORD made the heavens and the earth, the sea, and all that is in them, but He rested on the seventh day. Exodus 20:11

[The original Hebrew word for day (yom) which the Bible uses in describing the time span of creation is unquestionably speaking of literal 24 hour days, as each time it is used, it is accompanied by the phrase “And there was evening, and there was morning - the first day, (second day), etc.”]

And there was evening, and there was morning—the sixth day. Genesis 1:31

[The Hebrew word for “evening” (ereb) is always understood as “the time of the setting of the sun,” and

the Hebrew word for “morning” (boqer) always has the idea of early in the day, or “as the sun is rising.”] and that He did it approximately six thousand years ago. There are two ways in which a figure of only a few thousand years can be obtained.

(1). The Bible tells us God created the earth and the universe in six literal twenty-four hour days and man on the sixth day. It then gives the lineage from the first man (Adam) to Jesus Christ (seventy-six generations) who was here in human flesh approximately two-thousand years ago. (*See Exodus 20:11, Mark 10:6, Genesis 1:26-31, Luke 3:23-38*). This indicates that the earth is only a few thousand years old. If we stretch these genealogies to their breaking point, we may get 10,000 years.

(2). Adam was created on the sixth day of creation week. (*Mark 10:6, Genesis 1:26-31*) / There were 1,056 years from the creation of Adam to the birth of Noah. (*Genesis 5*) / There were 600 years from the birth of Noah to the flood. (*Genesis 7:6*) / There are an estimated 1,500 years - based upon 25 generations from Noah to King David of Israel who’s kingdom existed approximately 1000 B.C. (*Luke 3:31-36*) / There are an estimated 1,000 years from King David to the birth of Jesus (1000 B.C. to 0 A.D.). / There have been approximately 2,000 years since the birth of Jesus (0 A.D. to 1998 A.D.) / / Calculation = 1,056 + 600 + 1,500 + 1,000 + 2,000 = 6,156 years.

In an upcoming chapter, you are going to see that the scientific evidence overwhelmingly agrees with both the six-thousand year age and the twenty-four hour days.

E. THE TIME OF DINOSAURS & THE TIME OF MAN

*** According to the Theory of Evolution, dinosaurs became extinct millions of years before man existed.

*** The Bible says God created all land animals--which would include dinosaurs--on the same day He created man. Therefore, they existed together.

God made the wild animals according to their kinds, the livestock according to their kinds, and all the creatures that move along the ground according to their kinds. And God saw that it was good. Then God said, “Let us make man in our image,” . . . And there was evening, and there was morning—the sixth day. Genesis 1:25,26,31

It also tells of a conversation between God and a man named Job (which rhymes with robe), where part of the topic of discussion was dinosaurs, which Job had undoubtedly seen.

Look at the behemoth, which I made along with you and which feeds on grass like an ox. What strength he has in his loins, what power in the muscles of his belly! His tail sways like a cedar; the sinews of his thighs are close-knit. His bones are tubes of bronze, his limbs like rods of iron. He ranks first among the works of God, yet his Maker can approach him with His sword. Job 40:15-19

F. YOUR VALUE AS A HUMAN BEING

*** The Theory of Evolution claims that human beings are simply evolved animals and are, therefore, no more important than “any other animal.”

*** The Bible says God created human beings as a special creation “in His image” (having intellect,

creative ability, a free will, and an eternal spirit), and that He gave us dominion over the earth. It teaches that we are far more important than any temporal part of His creation--including animals--and that we exist for the purpose of being brought into His family. (Please note that because people are the ultimate reason for the existence of the earth, there would be no reason for the earth to exist millions of years before people appeared.)

Then God said, "Let us make man in our image, in our likeness, and let them rule over the fish of the sea and the birds of the air, over the livestock, over all the earth, and over all the creatures that move along the ground." Genesis 1:26

But those who are considered worthy of taking part in that age and in the resurrection from the dead will neither marry nor be given in marriage, and they can no longer die; for they are like the angels. They are God's children, since they are children of the resurrection. Luke 20:35,36

G. THE ORIGIN OF DEATH

*** The Theory of Evolution says that things had been living and dying for billions of years before human beings arrived on the scene--implying that death is a natural part of life.

*** The Bible says that the world which God created was "very good," and death was not a part of it. It says death entered as the result of human sin.

God saw all that He had made, and it was very good. Genesis 1:31

Therefore, just as sin entered the world through one man, and death through sin, and in this way death came to all men, because all sinned . . . Romans 5:12

H. THE EXISTENCE OF GOD, THE REALITY OF SIN, AND THE NEED OF SALVATION.

*** The Theory of Evolution says that human existence was an unplanned accident of nature and there is no Creator whom we can sin against. Since there is no Creator whom we can sin against, there is no Creator from whom we need forgiveness.

*** The Bible says there is an absolutely holy Creator God, who created the human race, as well as everything else in the universe. It says all humans have sinned against Him, and we all need His forgiveness. *I am the LORD your God; consecrate yourselves and be holy, because I am holy. Leviticus 11.44*

For in six days the LORD made the heavens and the earth, the sea, and all that is in them, but he rested on the seventh day. Exodus 20:11

. . . for all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God, . . . Romans 3:23

Repent, then, and turn to God, so that your sins may be wiped out, that times of refreshing may come from the Lord, and that he may send the Christ, who has been appointed for you—even Jesus. Acts 3:19,20

Chapter B-4

HOW THE THEORY OF EVOLUTION IS DANGEROUS AND EVIL

While everything that disagrees with the Bible is wrong and potentially dangerous, not all of it is intentionally evil. There are many opposing views which come from ignorance. The Theory of Evolution, however, does not. In the realm of evil lies and philosophies perpetrated by and upon different societies, it is absolutely one of the worst! Using this theory as justification, various people and groups have committed incredible acts of evil against each other—including wide-spread theft, enslavement, and murder—and countless numbers of them have rejected God and are now burning in Hell.

A. REJECTION OF GOD

The Theory of Evolution utterly contradicts the book of Genesis, which is the foundation for the entire Word of God. Genesis is where we find out that God created man and the universe, and that everything He made was ‘good.’

In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth. Genesis 1:1

God saw all that He had made, and it was very good. Genesis 1:31

It is where we learn of the beginning of sin and death (and that they are not God’s fault),

And the LORD God commanded the man, “You are free to eat from any tree in the garden; but you must not eat from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, for when you eat of it you will surely die.” Genesis 2:16,17

“Because you listened to your wife and ate from the tree about which I commanded you, ‘You must not eat of it,’ “Cursed is the ground because of you; through painful toil you will eat of it all the days of your life. It will produce thorns and thistles for you, and you will eat the plants of the field. By the sweat of your brow you will eat your food until you return to the ground, since from it you were taken; for dust you are and to dust you will return.” Genesis 3:17-19

and that the entire human race has become evil. (Thus, we should not be surprised when the world is united against Him.)

The LORD saw how great man's wickedness on the earth had become, and that every inclination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil all the time. Genesis 6:5

It tells of the first world-wide judgment (which displayed God’s wrath and justice),

The waters rose and covered the mountains to a depth of more than twenty feet. Every living thing that

moved on the earth perished—birds, livestock, wild animals, all the creatures that swarm over the earth, and all mankind. Genesis 7:20,21

and records His first promise of the Savior (which displayed His mercy). It says that the Savior would be male, born of a virgin, suffer when He came, and destroy Satan and his kingdom.

And I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between your offspring and hers; he will crush your head, and you will strike his heel. Genesis 3:15

(male = “he”) (born of a virgin = “her offspring”- or “her seed”) (suffer when He came = “you will strike his heel”) (destroy Satan and his kingdom = “he will crush your head”)

Anyone who rejects what is written in the first part of the Bible (Genesis) is going to have a hard time believing that which comes after (i.e. how to live and how to be saved).

If you believed Moses, you would believe me, for he wrote about me. But since you do not believe what he wrote, how are you going to believe what I say? John 5:46,47

He said to him, 'If they do not listen to Moses and the Prophets, they will not be convinced even if someone rises from the dead.' Luke 16:31

A major problem facing Christianity today, especially in the ‘Western World,’ is that we do not understand this Biblical truth as well as our Evolutionist opponents. Take a look at the following two quotes written by atheists.

“It becomes clear now that the whole justification of Jesus’ life and death is predicated on the existence of Adam and the forbidden fruit he and Eve ate. Without the original sin, who needs to be redeemed? Without Adam’s fall into a life of constant sin terminated by death, what purpose is there to Christianity? None. . . . Christianity has fought, still fights, and will fight science to the desperate end over evolution, because evolution destroys utterly and finally the very reason Jesus’ earthly life was supposedly made necessary. Destroy Adam and Eve and the original sin, and in the rubble you will find the sorry remains of the son of god. Take away the meaning of his death. If Jesus was not the redeemer who died for our sins, and this is what evolution means, then Christianity is nothing!” /// American Atheist Magazine, Feb., 1978, by G. Richard Bozarth.!”

“If all the animals and man had been evolved in this ascendant manner, then there had been no first parents, no Eden, and no Fall. And if there had been no fall, then the entire historical fabric of Christianity, the story of the first sin and the reason for an atonement, upon which the current teaching based Christian emotion and morality, collapsed like a house of cards.” /// Atheist - H.G. Wells, H.G., *The outline of history — being a plain history of life and mankind*, Cassell & Company Ltd, London, UK, (the fourth revision), Vol. 2, p. 616, 1925. /// (Herbert George Wells (1866–1946), mostly known as simply ‘H.G. Wells’, was a well-known pioneer of science fiction novels (The Time Machine, War of the Worlds), a prominent Fabian Socialist, historian and eugenicist.)

B. JUSTIFICATION OF EVIL

So, the Theory of Evolution completely contradicts the Bible; its’ adherents claiming that it is both scientifically verifiable and true, while the ‘Word of God’ is not. This then, supposedly disproves the existence of God, (i.e. ‘there is no Creator, no higher moral being, to whom we are accountable.’) As a result, people—bolstered by this lie—seek to justify all kinds of evil (doing whatever is right in

their own eyes). Not surprisingly, whatever is right in their eyes, often conflicts with whatever is right in their neighbors' eyes. The result: 'The strong rule the weak;' 'might makes right;' it's 'survival of the fittest.' (F.Y.I. The coming of this 'world-wide rebellious fantasy' was foretold by God 2,000 years ago.)

For the time will come when men will not put up with sound doctrine. Instead, to suit their own desires, they will gather around them a great number of teachers to say what their itching ears want to hear. They will turn their ears away from the truth and turn aside to myths. 2 Timothy 4:3,4

Here are some of the things which have occurred, as a result of people accepting the Theory of Evolution. All of this has taken place in the last hundred years.

1. MASS MURDER

1-a. Germany

When Adolph Hitler and the Nazis came into power in Germany in 1933, the country had already been taught that the Theory of Evolution was true. (Satan had prepared for their coming.) Hitler used this and the "superman philosophy" of Fredrich Nietzsche to convince the German people that they--the Aryan/Nordic/German type (non-Jewish, non-Polish Caucasians)--were the most highly-evolved and superior race on earth. His next step was to convince all the right people in all the right places that it was in the best interest of humanity to "further the process of natural selection" by annihilating the Jews, Poles, Gypsies, and others. This plan was then designed, organized, and put into place by some highly respected people in the academic world--judges, heads of hospitals, and heads of scientific institutions. They subsequently murdered eleven million citizens and confiscated their property.

Don't think that it is safe when people straddle the fence on this Creation vs. Evolution issue by saying they believe in both God and Evolution. This is called "Progressive Creationism" or "Theistic Evolution," and it suggests that God created the universe through the processes of Evolution. After the Holocaust, many Nazis and other Germans claimed this "belief" as a defense. They actually tried to justify what they did as "collaborating with God in the process of natural selection." Some of them were even 'church members,' (though, not true Christians). [15A]

1-b. Russia

Vladimir I. Lenin (leader of the Soviet Union 1917-1924) pushed a combination of Evolution, communism, and 'scientific atheism' while murdering tens of millions of people. [19H] [19K] Under his successor Joseph Stalin—who pushed the same beliefs—millions of more Soviet citizens were murdered or sent to labor camps. [23C] Stalin is said to have believed that killing millions of people was no worse than mowing your lawn (humans being 'related' to grass in Evolutionist's doctrine). [19H]

1-c. China

Mao Zedong (Mao Tse-tung)—the communist leader in China from 1949-1976—conducted a reign of terror which resulted in tens of millions of deaths. Zedong’s two favorite books were written by Charles Darwin and Alex Huxley. [19H]

1-d. Australia

The Theory of Evolution was also used to justify the mass murder of a large group of Aborigines (the native people of Australia) who were said to be “not fully human.” Some so-called scientists then went as far as having some of these murder victims skinned and their skulls removed for “scientific purposes.” (They actually skinned people’s mothers, fathers, sisters and brothers.) [1] [29]

1-e. U.S. Serial Killer

The theory of evolution is also dangerous on an individual basis. Look at the following quote by serial killer Jeffrey Dahmer on the Dateline NBC program, November 29, 1994.

“If a person doesn’t think that there is a God to be accountable to, then what’s the point of trying to modify your behavior to keep it within acceptable ranges? That’s how I thought anyway. I always believed the theory of evolution as truth, that we all just came from the slime. When we died, you know, that was it, there is nothing, and I’ve since come to believe that the Lord Jesus Christ is truly God, and I believe that I, as well as everyone else, will be accountable to Him.”

2. ABORTION

2-a. God and Abortion

Before we even get into this, let me assure you **from the Word of God** that a baby in the womb is a living person with senses, abilities, emotions, rights, and even a sinful nature.

*When Elizabeth heard Mary's greeting, the baby leaped in her womb, and Elizabeth was filled with the Holy Spirit. . .
“As soon as the sound of your greeting reached my ears, the baby in my womb leaped for joy.” Luke 1:41,44*

(Question: Can a non-living mass of tissue leap for joy?)

Surely I was sinful at birth, sinful from the time my mother conceived me.

Psalms 51:5 (Question: Can a non-living mass of tissue have a sinful nature?)

The Bible is so clear and so strong on this, that it not only specifically refers to a baby in the

womb as “life,” under ‘Old Testament’ law, the unjust ending of this “life” required the death penalty.

If men who are fighting hit a pregnant woman and she gives birth prematurely but there is no serious injury, the offender must be fined whatever the woman's husband demands and the court allows. But if there is serious injury, you are to take life for life, . . . Exodus 21:22,23

A “just” ending of it would only be to save the mother’s life. If the mother died, the baby would die anyway. (Question: If the virgin Mary would have had an abortion, what would have been removed?)

2-b. Medical Science and Abortion

Stages of Baby’s Development & Abortion	
Week 1	Conception
Week 2	
Week 3	Heart beats with Child’s own blood / Brain developing
Week 4	Legs developing
Week 5	Eyes developing / Ears, Nose, Lips, & Tongue clearly identifiable
Week 6	Brain Waves detectable / Baby can feel pain / Fingers developing
Week 7	Eyelids and Toes developing / Nose distinct
Week 8	Movement begins / All organs in place / Bones developing
Week 9	
Week 10	Teeth and Fingernails developing / Baby can Turn Head and Frown
Week 11	Baby can Grasp Objects Placed in Hand
Week 12	Sex can be determined
Week 13	ABORTION still considered First Trimester
Weeks 14-16	
Week 17	Baby can have dream (REM) sleep
Week 18	Mother can feel baby moving

Stages of Baby's Development & Abortion	
Weeks 19-24	
Week 25	Baby responds to sound / Babies born at this age often survive
Week 26	ABORTION still considered Second Trimester
Weeks 27-33	
Week 34	ABORTIONS up to the 9th month are legal in the U.S.A. **
Weeks 35-39	
Week 40	Average normal delivery

** Two 1973 Supreme Court Decisions made abortions up to the 9th month legal in the United States (Roe vs. Wade & Doe vs. Bolton).

Sources of information for above [35] [36]

(Question: Why is it legal to have an abortion, while it is illegal to destroy the egg of an endangered species animal?)

2-c. You and Abortion

I do not have the answer for the unwed mother problem in our world today. I have only Biblical solutions which do not work in societies which have rejected God. I know that if we would all repent, turn back to God, and ask Him for forgiveness and help, He would bless our world and provide for us all. While this unfortunately is not going to happen en-masse, it does happen on an individual basis. If you are considering an abortion, **STOP!!!** Go to God: Ask Him for help and trust Him to care for you and your baby. (Or allow the child to be adopted.) **If you have already had an abortion, then go to Him for forgiveness, healing, and love.** He is not only willing to forgive you, He actually died on a cross so He could. He is watching you right now, with forgiveness in mind, love in His heart, and His arms open wide to receive you. **Go to Him!**

This offer of forgiveness and love extends also to every repentant boyfriend, husband, and abortionist.

2-d. The Theory of Evolution and Abortion

In 1866, Ernst Heinrich Haeckel, a German biologist and strong supporter of Evolution, made the following statement: “The human fetus goes through a fish stage--with gill slits on the side of its head--which is a leftover characteristic of our evolutionary ascent.” He indicated that this was proof that we were simply evolving animals and that having an abortion was, therefore, no more significant than disposing of an unwanted pet. (This idiotic fabrication is known as “Haeckel’s Recapitulation Theory,” and the part of the baby which he said was “gill slits” is the inner ear and some of the glands in the neck in the early stages of development.) In perpetrating this lie, Haeckel also fabricated other supposed bits of evidence which people eagerly accepted as fact. (1) He created side by side drawings of human, rabbit, chicken, salamander, and fish embryos--altering their appearance in order to make them look similar. In these drawings, which were used in High School and College textbooks for more than 100 years, he added features, omitted others, and obscured differences in scale. (2) He claimed that people and animals had certain organs which he called “vestigial organs” (an example being the human appendix), which are supposedly useless to us now, but had been needed by our “evolutionary ancestors.” [Science has discovered the purpose of every organ in the human body (the appendix playing a role in the immune system) and given enough time, could do the same with every animal organ]. [19I] Haeckel’s theory is still being used by Evolutionists in the 1990's to justify abortion [29], and is still presented as fact in some schools and abortion clinics. [1] [34]

2-e. Money and Abortion

Abortion is not a “women’s rights” issue to the greatest forces supporting it in this country--legally, legislatively, and from a public relations standpoint. **It is a financial issue!** There were an estimated 35 million abortions performed in this country in the first 25 years after it became legal (in the 1973 Roe vs. Wade Supreme Court decision). What is even more sickening, is that the largest abortion providers in the United States are also the largest providers of sex-education curriculum to our children in the public schools. This curriculum, not surprisingly, almost always excludes teaching abstinence or severely neglects it. **In business, we call this “Marketing!”** (Another organization which has provided money for sex-education curriculum in our public schools, is one of the largest providers of pornography in this country.) [37]

3. RACISM & SLAVERY

Defining people by their race—by their physical characteristics—increased in popularity in the late 1800’s as a result of the growing acceptance of the Theory of Evolution which “recognized the superiority of more highly evolved people.”

Charles Darwin’s book--which introduced the Theory of Evolution to our culture in 1859--is usually referred to by the ‘shortened’ title, The Origin of Species. The full title was, On the Origin of Species by Means of Natural Selection, or the Preservation of Favoured Races in the Struggle for Life. [23A]

Racism is foolishness, as we are all one race (human), all created in the image of God (far above any animal), and have all descended from the same two people (Adam and Eve). The results of this evil became apparent in Germany under the reign of Adolph Hitler, who wrote in his book, Mein Kampf, “Racially mixed marriages would conceive monstrosities between man and ape, rather than images of

the Lord.” [19] It also became very apparent in the early years of this country, as the United States Supreme Court ruled that “black people were not human”--they had not fully evolved from apes--in the 1857 Dred Scott decision. [1] It was also argued around the time of the Civil War that “slavery reflected the law of nature, which permitted the strong to rule the weak.” [23B]

All humans are the same color, and range in shade only; because of the amount of melanin (pigment) in their skin, and/or amount of exposure to the sun. [29]

Some (as we would call them) black and white people are closer to each other in their DNA, than they are to other people of their same “color.” [28]

Selective inbreeding of human beings can, in as little as eight generations, change the characteristics of any particular race to match that of any other. [25]

If anyone says, “I love God,” yet hates his brother, he is a liar. For anyone who does not love his brother, whom he has seen, cannot love God, whom he has not seen. 1 John 4:20

HOW THE THEORY OF EVOLUTION IS DISPROVED BY SCIENCE & LOGIC

In this section, you are going to see how blatantly the Theory of Evolution conflicts with both science and logic. In regard to the way in which this information is being presented, you will see that much of it is in debate form; these could be the arguments used in favor of Creation during a Creation vs. Evolution debate. In reality, this was not easy. It is very difficult at times to address fantasy — logically. (My thanks to the many Creation Scientists who have produced this information.)

If everyone would be intellectually honest, the only question we would have to ask is this: Could what is happening right now, be happening right now, without original intent, design, or orchestration? In other words: Could you (a marvelous living, functioning, and thinking human being) be sitting here on this planet (which supplies all the necessities of life--food, water, oxygen, light, humidity, gravity, heat, atmospheric pressure, etc.) engaged in the incredible act of reading a book (using eyes to see, a brain to think, and fingers to turn the pages) all as a result of happenstance? Could a series of unintentional, unguided, and uncoordinated explosions, followed by the simple heating of the sun really have resulted in all this? As for me, even if I didn't know the Creator personally, I would have to believe that He exists.

*For since the creation of the world God's invisible qualities—his eternal power and divine nature— have been clearly seen, being understood from what has been made, so that men are without excuse.
Romans 1:20*

A. LOGICAL QUESTIONS THE THEORY OF EVOLUTION CAN'T ANSWER

Remember ...

The Theory of (Organic) Evolution claims that the sun's energy is responsible for the beginning of life on earth. It claims that the electromagnetic radiation coming in from the sun caused the first living organism to form and come to life. This original life form is then said to have begun reproducing, thereby creating other living organisms like itself. Then as a result of a countless number of accidental changes (mutations) which theoretically occurred in subsequent reproductions (in subsequent generations), this original species is claimed to have ultimately evolved into all the diverse and complex forms of life which we find on earth today. This supposedly occurred over a period of billions of years.

QUESTION # 1 - THE FIRST LIFE FORM

How did sunlight create the first living cell? How did a simple influx of energy bring all of the right components together and arrange them in the very precise order which is required for life? How did it cause them to function together as a unit? How did it create the cell membrane and envelop them inside? How “by sheer chance” did this cell membrane function perfectly, allowing all the necessities of life to pass through, while keeping all substances which could kill the cell out--even allowing waste products to pass out of the cell, but not back in? How did this life form “accidentally” begin performing all of the required processes of life--generating energy, “breathing,” taking in food, getting rid of waste--all of which are dependent upon each other? (A cell must be “breathing” and processing food in order to generate energy, and it must be generating energy in order to “breathe” and process food.)

For in six days the LORD made the heavens and the earth, the sea, and all that is in them, but he rested on the seventh day. Exodus 20:11

QUESTION # 2 - CELL REPRODUCTION

How did a simple influx of energy create a life form with the incredible ability to reproduce? How “by pure chance” was the very first (or any) living cell able to coalesce, grasp, read, then duplicate its own genetic “blueprint,” which showed every aspect of how it was made and how it functioned--both internally and in relationship to its environment? How “by pure chance” was it then able to divide this information and, with the precisely required matter, separate into two separate living organisms--each with the incredible ability to grow back into a duplicate of the original? How “by pure chance” were these two new organisms then able to precisely remanufacture all the matter which had been lost (to each other) through the division? How “by pure chance” did this entire process occur in the correct sequence, and how did it get recorded in the original “blueprint”--so that the second generation could also reproduce--before it had even occurred the first time?

QUESTION # 3 - MULTI-CELLULAR ORGANISMS

How did a single-cell organism (the original kind of life form, according to Evolution) evolve into all the various types of multi-cellular organisms? How could an organism which was complete in and of itself--as a single-cell--“accidentally” evolve into all of these much larger and far more complex systems--in which a single cell is simply a part of a part of the whole? For instance, a single cell is a tiny part of a hair, which is a tiny part of a horse. (This is analogous to suggesting that an original kind of bolt accidentally evolved into all the different kinds of machines around the world--pulleys, meat grinders, hay balers, sewing machines, elevators, automobiles, airplanes, boats, etc.)

God made the wild animals according to their kinds, the livestock according to their kinds, and all the creatures that move along the ground according to their kinds. . . Then God said, “Let us make man in our image,” . . . And there was evening, and there was morning—the sixth day. Genesis 1:25,26,31

For example, how did “a random series of accidents” result in all the unique and integral parts

of a tree--trunk and branches (consisting of four different types of tissue), roots, sap, leaves, seeds, etc.-- and how is it that they are all in the right place, at the right time, in the right dimensions, and they all function together perfectly as a unit? How did “chance” create the roots, which secure it to the ground and take in half of the requirements for food--water and inorganic matter? How did “chance” create the leaves, which always face the sun and take in the other half of the requirements for food--carbon dioxide and sunlight? How did “chance” give the tree the ability to produce food from these raw materials--the process of photosynthesis--and how did “chance” cause all of these parts to cooperate in this process?

Then God said, “Let the land produce vegetation: seed-bearing plants and trees on the land that bear fruit with seed in it, according to their various kinds.” And it was so. . . And there was evening and there was morning—the third day. Genesis 1:11,13

Why are there no two-cell organisms? Three-cell? Four-cell? Five-cell? - - - Twenty-cell?

QUESTION # 4 - CELL SPECIALIZATION

How did cells get the ability to “specialize;” to come into existence as a particular part of an organism? From our previous example, how are some cells able to come into existence as part of a leaf, while others (which contain the same information) come into existence as part of a root? In regard to an animal, how do some cells become blood, while others become brain, hair, bone, or muscles? Why do we have the right number of blood cells, the right number of skin cells, the right number of bone cells; and why are they all in the right place at the right time? (Why do we have hair on our heads but not in our lungs?) Where did the program come from which guides all of these processes, and how did it get written in the cells (if it even is)? How do cells know to quit reproducing once a job is finished, once a leg has been formed, or a cut has been healed?

For you created my inmost being; you knit me together in my mother's womb. Psalm 139:13

QUESTION # 5 - MALE & FEMALE REPRODUCTION

Regarding Reproduction: How did a single-cell organism (the original kind of life form according to Evolution) which reproduced by simply dividing in two, “accidentally” evolve into all the various types of separate male and female multi-cellular organisms which must come together to mate? This includes everything from insects and animals to humans. (This is analogous to suggesting that an original kind of bolt accidentally evolved into all the various types of aircraft, each type having two versions, both programmed and equipped for mid-air refueling.)

How did a totally separate male organism (something which “did not exist originally”) and a totally separate female organism (something else which “did not exist originally”) find themselves in existence at the same time, in the same place, “by sheer accident”? How “by sheer accident” were these two “genetic mistakes” sexually compatible? How did this female get “mutated” into existence with her entire reproductive system installed, functional, and ready for mating? How did this male get “mutated” into existence with the totally compatible, and totally required (for species survival) counterpart system installed, functional, and ready for mating? How did these two organisms “by sheer chance” find themselves with brains, so they were able to understand such things as males, females,

and mating (so they wouldn't just stand around thinking they were amoebas)? How "by sheer chance" did their brains get programmed with the instinct to come together to mate and the knowledge of how to proceed? (A computer is useless unless you program it.) If the male, the female, the male's brain (with program), the female's brain (with program), or any part of either one of their entire reproductive systems was missing, inadequate, or failed to operate properly at this time, the organisms could not have produced an offspring. If they could not have produced an offspring, neither could they have established, nor continued a male/female multi-cellular species.

How by "sheer accident" do we have female organisms with wombs and the ability to grow a placenta and an umbilical cord, which enables the baby to receive nourishment during gestation and provide for the elimination of waste? How "by sheer accident" do we have others with the ability to produce eggs, which form around their offspring and contain all the right amounts of all the right nutrients needed during gestation? How do these organisms know that their eggs need to stay warm? How do the babies know to break out of the shell?

When God created man, he made him in the likeness of God. He created them male and female and blessed them. Genesis 5:1,2

You are to bring into the ark two of all living creatures, male and female, to keep them alive with you. Two of every kind of bird, of every kind of animal and of every kind of creature that moves along the ground will come to you to be kept alive. Genesis 6:19, 20

QUESTION # 6 – MAMMALS

How "by sheer accident" did animals develop the ability to produce milk, as well as the need for it? How do mothers "accidentally" know that their babies need to be fed, as well as how to do it? How do new-born babies "accidentally" know to look for their mother's breasts and what to do once they find them? How 'by accident' did a mothers' body gain the ability to chemically alter the milk she is producing when her baby gets sick—providing healing properties. How 'by accident' did a baby's mouth gain the ability to signal it's mother's body, when the baby gets sick? How did both the mommy and the baby accidentally come into existence – at the same time, in the same place, both fully functional, with brains and programs installed? (If they didn't, which one evolved first and how many generations did it take for the other one to arrive?)

QUESTION # 7 - INTERBREEDING OF SPECIES

Why can't we interbreed different species? If cats and dogs came from the same ancestor, then shouldn't we be able to interbreed them? Wouldn't they have done it on their own? Wouldn't the world be filled with a much greater mixture of animals because of interbreeding? Why hasn't science ever done it using the technique of in-vitro fertilization? [Believe me, if this was possible, Evolutionists would have done it by now, as a mixed species could easily be presented as a "transitional life form."] About the only interbreeding of animal species which is possible is between a horse and a donkey (both of the genus "Equus") which produces a mule, and between a lion and a leopard (both of the genus "Panthera") which produces a leopon. Neither the mule nor the leopon, however, can reproduce. They are both sterile.

Continuing the line of questioning from number five above: How did one species with separate male and female organisms (like cats) reproduce a different species with separate male and female organisms (like dogs)? Since different species are unable to mate with each other, then how did an entirely new and separate species--both male and female, sexually compatible with each other, but not with other species--ever come into being? This question can be asked as many times as there are different species in the world.

So God created the great creatures of the sea and every living and moving thing with which the water teems, according to their kinds, and every winged bird according to its kind. . . And there was evening, and there was morning—the fifth day. Genesis 1:21,23

God made the wild animals according to their kinds, the livestock according to their kinds, and all the creatures that move along the ground according to their kinds. . . Then God said, “Let us make man in our image,” . . . And there was evening, and there was morning—the sixth day. Genesis 1:25,26,31

QUESTION # 8 - EVOLUTIONARY LINES OF ASCENT

Why can't we line up any of the species according to their evolutionary ascent? What is the evolutionary line leading up to, or even the species immediately before the porcupine? How about the cat? giraffe? elephant? skunk? pig? wasp? electric eel? What are the lines that take the blue whale and the black widow spider back to a common ancestor? How about the duck-billed platypus? What did this creature evolve from? It has a bill like a duck, a tail like a beaver, feet like an otter, spurs like a rooster, claws like a turtle, venom like a snake, and is classified as a mammal, yet lays eggs? (I'll bet God was laughing at Evolution when He created this one.)

So God created the great creatures of the sea and every living and moving thing with which the water teems, according to their kinds, and every winged bird according to its kind. . . And there was evening, and there was morning— the fifth day. Genesis 1:21,23

God made the wild animals according to their kinds, the livestock according to their kinds, and all the creatures that move along the ground according to their kinds. And God saw that it was good. Then God said, “Let us make man in our image,” . . . And there was evening, and there was morning—the sixth day. Genesis 1:25,26,31

QUESTION # 9 - LIVESTOCK

If all animals came into existence by accident, and the various species were established through the processes of natural selection (i.e. only the strong survive), how did livestock species like sheep ever come into existence? Sheep are totally dependant upon humans for their survival and would quickly perish out in nature. (Humans supposedly evolved into existence around the same time as sheep.)

God made the wild animals according to their kinds, the livestock according to their kinds, . . . Genesis 1:25

QUESTION # 10 - PRESENT DAY EVOLUTION

Why has there never been a creature found which was partially evolved between two species? Why, in modern times or in any book of history, has no one ever reported seeing anything out of the ordinary, like a snake with the beginning of legs hobbling around on its nubs? Or a slightly feathered reptile learning to flap its legs? Or a fish trying to stand on its feet? Or a cow growing flippers? Or a monkey beginning to speak? Why does every creature fit perfectly into a particular group? Why is every dog a dog, every snake a snake, every bird a bird, and every elephant an elephant?

QUESTION # 11 - THE FEAR OF MAN

If humans evolved from animals and are in essence no different, then why do animals fear man? Why do humans have no “natural enemies?” Why are we not a regular part of the food chain? Why does the lion (the “king of the jungle”) avoid humans? Why do national parks warn people that wild animals are dangerous once they lose their “natural fear of man?” Why do farmers make scare-crows look like people? Why do some wild animals abandon their young if they are touched by a human? Why do we have to entice wild animals with food to come near? Why do hunters have to use camouflage, duck blinds, tree stands, etc.?

Then God blessed Noah and his sons, saying to them, “Be fruitful and increase in number and fill the earth. The fear and dread of you will fall upon all the beasts of the earth and all the birds of the air, upon every creature that moves along the ground, and upon all the fish of the sea; they are given into your hands. Everything that lives and moves will be food for you. Genesis 9:1-3

QUESTION # 12 - HUMAN DOMINION

If humans evolved from animals and are in essence no different, then why do humans rule the earth? Why are we the only species that cuts down trees to make room for our lives? Why are we the only species that build farms and plant orchards? Why are we the only species that creates national parks, wildlife preserves, aquariums, and zoos? Why are we the only species that builds earth-moving machines for mining and factories for converting natural resources? Why are we the only species that raises other species (en masse) for food? Why are we the only species that has pets?

So God created man in his own image, in the image of God he created him, male and female, he created them. God blessed them and said to them, “Be fruitful and increase in number; fill the earth and subdue it.” Genesis 1:27,28

(Notice that God said to “subdue” the earth, not “destroy” the earth.)

Then God blessed Noah and his sons, saying to them, “Be fruitful and increase in number and fill the earth. The fear and dread of you will fall upon all the beasts of the earth and all the birds of the air, upon every creature that moves along the ground, and upon all the fish of the sea; they are given into your hands. Everything that lives and moves will be food for you. Genesis 9:1-3

QUESTION # 13 - HUMAN BIOLOGICAL COMPLEXITY

How did a string of “chance random mutations” result in the incredible complexity of the human being, on either the macro or the micro level (not to mention the complexity of all the animals which exist)?

13-a. Macro Biological Complexity

Each one of us is a living, breathing, thinking, moving, sensing, desiring, willing, creative, and emotional human being, perfectly suited for interacting with and surviving in our environment. We have a brain, eyes, ears, nose, mouth, arms, hands, fingers, legs, feet, toes, finger nails, toe nails, joints, skin, hair, nerves, bones, muscles, tendons, ligaments, heart, blood, veins, arteries, lungs, kidneys, pharynx, esophagus, stomach, intestines, pancreas, etc., each of which is in the right place, of the right dimensions, in the right amount, performing the right function (or functions). Together, they form one magnificent system. Our bodies take in food and oxygen to produce energy, and then rid themselves of waste. They grow, replace worn out parts (cells), repair themselves when damaged, fight off disease, sense our environment (five different ways), do work, create and transfer heat (to keep the internal organs at the required temperature), and cool themselves off. We have a skeletal system--consisting of more than 200 bones--which supports our body, protects our internal organs, and helps keep our blood healthy. We have a muscular system--consisting of 600 muscles--which enables us to move and aids in digestion, breathing, and blood circulation. We have a digestive system--using eleven parts of the body and thirty-two perfectly shaped, perfectly positioned teeth, performing an eighteen step process--which provides us with energy and enables us to grow. We have a respiratory system--using several parts of the body, including six-hundred to a thousand square feet (if flattened out) of air sacks in our lungs, performing a five step process--which provides us with oxygen and rids us of carbon dioxide. We have a circulatory system--using several parts of the body and more than 60,000 miles of arteries, veins, and branching capillaries--performing six different functions. We have a urinary system--using several parts of the body, including more than 1 million filtering units in each kidney--which rids us of waste. We have a lymphatic system--consisting of ducts, channels, and glands located throughout the body--which cleanses and nourishes all of our body tissue. We have an endocrine system--consisting of five major types of glands and incorporates the brain, kidneys, stomach, and pancreas--which plays an important part in the way our bodies use food, the way we grow, the way we handle stress and emergencies, and the way we reproduce. We have three different nervous systems which run all the other systems. We also have a reproductive system, which upon uniting with a person of the opposite sex, can actually produce another human being in only 280 days. All twelve systems function together as one overall system known as the “human body.” [23D]

13-b. Micro Biological Complexity

The human body is made up of 30 trillion diverse and complicated cells (20 billion of which wear out and are replaced daily). Each cell has a nucleus containing millions of components. The brain is made up of 12 billion cells. There are 120 trillion electrical connections in the brain. Every cubic inch of the brain contains more than 100 million nerve cells interconnected by 10 thousand miles of fiber. The brain sends and/or receives 100 million electrical signals to and from the body every second. These messages travel at speeds of up to 100 yards per second. All 30 trillion diverse cells are

produced from the single “blueprint” stored in the DNA molecule. After conception, the cells begin to divide and specialize, but each one contains the entire “blueprint” (This is how scientists were recently able to clone a sheep.) One human DNA molecule contains enough information to fill 1000 books, each 500 pages long, typed in very small print. There are 10 to the 87th power ways to arrange the information in a single DNA rung, but only one way to be correct as required for reproduction. The human body has a built in DNA error correction system. (A number of key enzymes within the cell do nothing other than find and correct DNA errors.) [4] [9] [11] [20] [23D]

I praise you because I am fearfully and wonderfully made; your works are wonderful, I know that full well. Psalm 139:14

A simple question we could ask is, “Could the human race--combining all of our knowledge, creative ability, science, and technology--create a computer robot with all the abilities of the human being?” If the answer is no--which it unquestionably is--then how can anyone believe that what is far too complex and awesome for the greatest human minds to duplicate happened by accident? (We can’t even make a robot that can walk smoothly.) If you really believe this mess--that human beings happened by accident--then I’ve got another one for you: I didn’t write this book. I accidentally knocked my computer keyboard into a box of frogs that subsequently jumped up and down on the keys and produced the whole thing!

Scientists have created a computer chip which can “see” approximately one-fifth as well as the retina of the human eye. This computer chip however, is 10,000 cubic inches in size, weighs 100 pounds, takes 300 watts of power to operate, and requires a cooling system. [12]

How awesome is the LORD Most High, the great King over all the earth! Psalm 47:2

QUESTION # 14 - REQUIREMENTS FOR LIFE ON EARTH

How did each of the factors required for life to exist on earth come into being in exactly the right place, in the right form, in the right amount, at the right time, entirely by accident, apart from any intelligent input, design, effort, or orchestration? (Below are just a few of these factors; there are probably billions!)

14-a. The earth has all of the requirements for physical life--food, liquid water, humidity, oxygen, nitrogen, carbon dioxide, light, heat, gravity, magnetism, etc.--all in the precisely required forms, locations, and amounts.

14-b. Plants “breathe out” oxygen which animals need; animals breathe out carbon dioxide which plants need.

14-c. If the earth were smaller, its gravity would be less and could not hold air or water (our atmosphere). In addition to being comprised of these basic biological needs, our atmosphere also protects us from eight deadly rays from the sun as well as from approximately 20,000 meteorites which would otherwise strike the earth daily. [27] [30]

14-d. Ozone, the element in our atmosphere which stops these eight deadly rays, allows the most deadly one through in just the right amount. This precise amount of radiation kills just enough green algae--which grows in water and is an important source of food for aquatic animals--to keep it from filling all the lakes, rivers and oceans of the world.. [30]

14-e. If the earth were twice its size, everything would weigh eight times as much and no life forms could exist here. [27]

14-f. Without the 23 degree tilt of the earth as it rotates, the poles would be much colder, the equator much hotter, and only about half of its land mass could be inhabited. [27] [30]

14-g. The earth is the only planet where water can remain liquid. [27]

14-h. Without lightening, which takes nitrogen out of the atmosphere and puts it into the ground, plants could not grow and there would be no food source for animals. [30]

14-i. Without ocean currents--such as the Gulf Stream--which are caused by a combination of constant winds and the earth's rotation, the oceans would stagnate and poison the earth. [27]

14-j. Without the earth's magnetic field, which affects all biological systems, life could not exist here. [12]

14-k. Without our moon, with its precise size and distance from the earth--causing ocean tides by its gravitational pull--the oceans would stagnate and poison the earth. [27]

14-l. The moon's gravitational pull mixes the elements of our atmosphere, which is required to continually provide us with the right amount of oxygen. [30]

14-m. The sun is the precise size and distance from the earth required for life to exist here. With one percent less of the sun's energy, the earth would be covered in ice. With one percent more, it would be unbearably hot. [27]

Before continuing, please consider the following question: "What are the chances of it coming up heads?" You, of course, cannot answer this question unless you have more information. (Am I talking about a coin? Is somebody flipping it in the air? Is gravity going to cause it to land on a hard, flat surface?) What if I told you, however, there is no more information? Notice I didn't say, "I don't have any more information." I said, "There is no more information." There is no object, there are no forces to act upon an object, and there is no surface where an object can land. Your answer, therefore,

would have to be, 'There is no chance of it coming up heads.' There must be an object, there must be a force to act upon that object, and there must be a place for that object to land in order for "chance" to exist. "Chance," you see, is not a force. "Chance" cannot do anything! It cannot cause anything, it cannot affect anything, and--needless to say--it could not have created the universe.

B. SCIENTIFIC FACTS WHICH AGREE WITH THE BIBLE & DISAGREE WITH THE THEORY OF EVOLUTION

FACT # 1 - THE AGE OF THE UNIVERSE

The earth and the universe are very young, and this disproves the Theory of Evolution. Today, practically all scientists agree that if Evolution was true, it would have taken billions of years for the species on earth to have evolved to the complexity of modern day life forms. The latest claims say that the original life form lived somewhere between 3.5 and 4.6 billion years ago, and that the earth and the universe are hundreds of billions of years old. (It's important to note that this theoretical length of time has been continually increased as more and more powerful microscopes have shown the complexity of the microscopic world.)

Evolutionists today claim that the earth is hundreds of billions of years old. In 1900 they claimed that it was 400 to 500 million years old. In the mid 1800's they claimed that it was 400 to 500 thousand years old. [15B]

(The "simple cell" is a term no longer used.) The following are scientific facts which show that the earth and the universe are very young. (Remember that the Bible indicates the earth and the universe are approximately six-thousand years old.)

1-a. Earth's Magnetic Field:

The strength of earth's magnetic field decreases by 50% every 1,400 years. (This measure of its energy decay is known as its "half-life.") This means that 1,400 years ago, the magnetic field was twice as strong as it is right now. 1,400 years before that, it was four times as strong as it is today. Before that, eight times as strong, then 16 times as strong, then 32 times and so on. At some point around 10,000 years ago, the magnetic field would have been so strong that enzymes within the functioning cell could not have held together, and life could not have existed on earth. 20,000 years ago, many of the atoms on earth could not have held together. It is also believed that the earth's structure could not have survived the heat which would have been produced by the electro-magnetic energy. [4] [6] [11] [12] [22] [62] [63]

1-b. Helium in Our Atmosphere:

The atmosphere around the earth contains helium, which it receives from at least two sources. It

is generated by the decay of radioactive elements in the earths' crust and, it comes in from the sun. Current diffusion models all indicate that helium leaves our atmosphere—escaping into space—at a much slower rate than it is deposited. Based upon the current rate of deposit, the amount which escapes, and the amount which is currently present, the earth appears to be less than 1.8 million years old.

Obviously, there was certain amount of helium in the atmosphere when God created it, so that the current amount has been achieved in 6,000 years. If the earth was actually 4.5 billion years old—which is what evolutionist claim—and helium had been accumulating for that length of time, life would not be possible on earth. [6] [11] [64]

1-c. Moon Quakes:

Four seismometers left on the moon in the 1960s and 70s—by the Apollo astronauts—recorded 28 “moon-quakes” between then and 2019. This indicates that the moon is *still* cooling and shrinking, since its' creation. This indicates that the moon cannot be millions or billions of years old, because it would not have any remaining heat to lose. [4] [22] [65]

Evolutionists claim that the earth came into existence 4.5 billion years ago, and the moon, shortly after that.

1-d. Moon Drift:

The “Lunar Distance”—the average distance between the center of the earth and the center of the moon—is approximately 250,000 miles. (The moons' orbit is oval.) This 'average distance,' however, is increasing. The gravitational pull of the moon creates a “tidal bulge” on the earth which causes the moon to spiral outwards very slowly. Based on these gravitational forces and the current rate of drift, scientists can calculate how much the moon has moved over time. Six thousand years ago, the moon would have been about 800 feet closer. One and a half billion years ago, it would have been touching the earth! The laws of physics actually show that if the two were ever closer than 11,500 miles, (a distance known as the “Roche Limit”), the earth’s powerful tidal forces would have broken the moon apart. [4] [11] [62] [63]

Evolutionists claim that the earth came into existence 4.5 billion years ago, and the moon, shortly after that.

1-e. Comets in Our Solar System:

Comets—which have been described as 'dirty snowballs orbiting the sun'—lose some of their mass every time their orbit takes them close to it. These comets—which scientists believe are as old as the universe—shouldn't be able to exist for more than about 10,000 years. This suggests that the universe is less than 10,000 years old.

Evolutionists, unwilling to accept this possibility, have theorized two possible sources for these

comets—which shouldn't exist if our solar system is billions of years old. They call these theoretical sources the “Oort Cloud” and the “Kuiper Belt.” The “Oort Cloud” is suggested to be a supply of comets which exists somewhere outside our solar system (i.e. too far away to detect or verify). The “Kuiper Belt,” the name given to an area beyond Neptune's orbit, has been found to contain objects which are too large (like Pluto and its moons) and too few in number to produce the comets which we see. [19D] [19O] [62] [66]

1-f. Continental Erosion:

Earth's continents are being continually eroded by storms, as land masses are blasted by sand, water, ice, etc. - carried by the wind. In addition, on the coasts, they encounter crashing waves, tides, currents, and corrosion. (Corrosion occurs when the seas' pH is less than seven). If the earth was 4.5 billion years old, there would be no continents; they would have been reduced to sea-level 'long' before now. [67]

Evolutionists claim that the earth came into existence 4.5 billion years ago.

1-g. There Was a World-Wide Flood:

About 4,000 years ago—according to geology, paleontology, population growth studies and the Bible—there was a world-wide flood. The Bible says that God sent this flood as judgment against the people of that day, killing all except for eight of them. It says that people had become unceasingly evil in every way, and God said, 'Enough! The results of this flood—which can be seen around our planet—serve as further evidence that the earth is thousands of years old, not billions. Today, this evidence is routinely ignored or deliberately misinterpreted by 'evolutionary scientists,' (which God said was going to happen) because they hate this reality. They hate the fact that God judged the world in the past, and they hate the fact that He is preparing to do it again. Here is some of that evidence. [62]

1-h. Sea-Floor Sediment:

Each year, wind and water erode an estimated 20 billion tons of dirt and rock debris from the continents, depositing it on the seafloor. Most of this material remains—as loose sediments—near the continents. Some of this sediment appears to be removed (an estimated 1 billion tons per year) as tectonic plates slide slowly beneath the continents. (Continents move about an inch or two per year). The net gain is around 19 billion tons per year. The average thickness of all these sediments—globally over the whole seafloor—is less than 1,300 feet (400 m). At 19 billion tons per year, this amount of sediment would accumulate in less than 12 million years. Millions of years, however, are totally unnecessary, as the flood—which God sent around 4,000 years ago—would have deposited the greatest amount of this sediment. In the latter stages of the flood, water would have drained off the emerging land, dumping its sediment offshore. [62]

Evolutionists claim that the earth came into existence 4.5 billion years ago and the sediment has been accumulating for billions of years?

1-i. Geological Layers / Poly-Straight Fossils:

As water moves rapidly across an area of land—such as during a flood—it will stir up dirt and/or sand and carry it along with it. As it slows down or stops, the sediments, being heavier than the water, settle to the bottom, forming one or more layers. (Heavier silts settle before lighter ones.)

Subsequently, if more water comes in, it will bring in more sediment, thereby depositing one or more additional layers on top of the one (s) already laid. After a relatively short period of time, this sediment—if it contains the necessary clay and limestone—will coalesce into solid rock (like cement). If, before these layers become fully hardened, they are adjusted by upheavals of the ground—such as when “the springs of the great deep were bursting forth” during the flood—they can bend without cracking or breaking. (Otherwise, the only way for this to happen is for the 'already hardened layers' to be re-softened by extreme heating—causing re-crystallization—then undergo adjustment before re-cooling). At numerous locations around the world—such as the Grand Canyon—massive layers of strata can be seen, not only bent, but 'tightly folded,' without evidence of the sediments being heated. This means that multiples of these layers were formed, then bent together, before fully hardening. These distinct layers often extend from tens to hundreds of miles in all directions. Found on different continents.

'Poly straight fossils'—fossils of plants and animals, which extend up through two or more of these rock layers—also show that there were not long periods of time which occurred between the forming of these layers. A plant or animal—partially covered by a layer of sediment—is not going to maintain its' complete shape for millions or billions of years, waiting for the exposed portion to be covered by the next layer of sediment. (F.Y.I. There are sea-life fossils on top of every mountain range on the earth).

Evolutionists claim that there were from two-million to two-billion years between the formation of any two of these geological layers. (This is what they refer to as the “geologic column” or “geologic record.”). As the information above reveals, however, these layers formed, often many at a time, quite rapidly. [12] [62] [67]

1-j. Dinosaur Bone / Not Stone:

How do fossils—rocks in the shapes of plants or animals—form? // As stated in the entry above, when water moves rapidly across an area of land—such as during a flood—it will stir up dirt and/or sand and carry it along with it. As it slows down or stops, the sediments, being heavier than the water, settle to the bottom, forming one or more layers. (Heavier silts settle before lighter ones.) Subsequently, if more water comes in, it will bring in more sediment, thereby depositing one or more additional layers on top of the one (s) already laid. Any larger objects which happen to get swept along with this water and also sink to the bottom, can become buried within these layers of sediment. After a relatively short period of time, this sediment—if it contains the necessary clay and limestone—will coalesce into solid rock (like cement), permanently encasing any totally covered objects inside. Any of these objects which happen to be of an organic nature—plants or animals—will gradually decay, and their bodies will be replaced by the minerals which surround them. Ultimately, the objects themselves cease to

exist, but their exact shapes are maintained by the minerals which replace them. [12]

This is generally what geologists find in their excavations. In recent years, however, there have been several fossils found—including a *Tyrannosaurus-Rex* femur—which are still part bone. The T-Rex 'fossil' contains soft, stretchy tissue, branching blood vessels and intact cells inside the blood vessels. Similar finds involve a *Hadrosaur* and a *Triceratops*. [68]

Evolutionists claim that dinosaurs died out 66 million years ago, but there is no way for biological material to survive for this 'imaginary' length of time.

1-k. Human Population & Growth Rate:

Many scientists believe that the population of the earth has been increasing at about two percent per year over the centuries. (According to the U.S. Census Bureau, it was 7.73 billion in 2020) Using computer modeling; beginning with a population of six people, 4,000 years ago (Noah's three sons and their wives, at the end of the flood), and applying a growth rate of two-percent per year, gives a number which works with the quantity of people living today.

Evolutionists claim that humans accidentally evolved (from chimp-like ancestors) 4 to 9 million years ago. If this was true, there should be countless billions of people living today or buried in the fossil record, and Earth's resources should have been used up. (F.Y.I. If humans had been here for 50,000 years, the population should be '10 to the 99th power. If humans had been here for one million years, the population should be '10 to the 2,100th power. [11] [15B] 62] [68]

FACT # 2 - THE TIME SPAN OF CREATION

Not only are the earth and the universe approximately six-thousand years old, they were created over a period of six literal 24-hour days--as stated in the Bible.

And there was evening, and there was morning—the fifth day. Genesis 1:23

For in six days the LORD made the heavens and the earth, the sea, and all that is in them, but He rested on the seventh day. Exodus 20:11

2-a. The Crust of the Earth Formed in Less Than One Second.

Granite underlies all of the continents of the earth and was originally under all of the sea basins as well. Over 200,000 samples of this granite--from many different depths, from all over the earth--have been analyzed. All of these samples contain a mineral known as biotite (or mica). These are the visible black specks which can be seen in a marble building, marble floor, etc. Under a microscope, all of this biotite shows evidence of the radioactive decay of polonium 214 (as well as 210 and 218). When the polonium was decaying, it was radiating energy. The granite hardened and cooled fast enough to register the effect of this radioactive energy. The effect shows up as microscopically observable rings (or spheres, when considering it three-dimensionally) which are known as "pleocolic

radiohalos,” or “polonium radiohalos”. If the granite had not hardened quickly enough, it would have been too unstable to record these rings. The half-life of polonium 214 is only .000164 seconds. (The “half-life” is the length of time it takes for one-half of a substance to disappear or change into a different substance.) After seven half-lives of any element, all the measurable energy is gone. This means that the crust of the earth was formed (the granite had hardened and cooled) in less than .001148 second. (.000164 second per half-life x 7 half-lives = .001148 second.) This means that when God said “let dry ground appear,” it did! It could have formed 871 times in one second (.001148 second x 871 = 1 second). This research was done by Physicist Dr. Robert V. Gentry. [11] [12] [15B] [63]

And God said, “Let the water under the sky be gathered to one place , and let dry ground appear.” And it was so. Genesis 1:9

2-b. Relationships of Dependency

There are relationships in nature in which totally dissimilar organisms are dependent upon each other for survival (in addition to being a food source). Here are some examples. (1). The symbiotic relationship between the honey bee and pollen bearing plants which require cross pollination. (2). The symbiotic relationship between the Fig Gall Wasp and a fig tree. This plant cannot reproduce without this wasp, and this wasp cannot reproduce without this plant. (3). The bumble bee and a plant known as the “Bee Lily.” This species of lily, which is totally dependent upon the bumble bee for cross-pollination, produces a platform for the male bee to land on. This platform matches perfectly the color, stripes, and scent of the female bumble bee. These lilies require cross-pollination in the spring, at a time after the male bees have emerged but before the females have. (4). There is another plant species, the “Voodoo Lily,” which requires the presence of a certain beetle for its continued existence. At the precise time that it needs this beetle, it increases its temperature by up to 35 degrees Fahrenheit, producing a smell which attracts the beetle. [12] (How any of these relationships occurred is yet another question the Theory of Evolution cannot answer.)

What all of this shows, is that when the Bible says God created plants on day three and insects on day six, these had to be literal 24-hour days. If they had been long periods of time (as many deceived Christians believe), these plant species would not have had the ability to reproduce and, thus, would have died out before the insects arrived.

Then God said, “Let the land produce vegetation: seed-bearing plants and trees on the land that bear fruit with seed in it, according to their various kinds.” And it was so. . . And there was evening, and there was morning—the third day. Genesis 1:11,13

God made the wild animals according to their kinds, the livestock according to their kinds, and all the creatures that move along the ground according to their kinds. And God saw that it was good. Then God said, “Let us make man in our image,” . . . And there was evening, and there was morning—the sixth day. Genesis 1:25,26,31

2-c. Plants and the Sun

A similar situation also exists in regard to plant life and the sun. The Bible says God created the plants on day three and the sun on day four. Again, if these days had been long periods of time, the plants would not have survived until the sun began to shine.

Then God said, "Let the land produce vegetation: seed-bearing plants and trees on the land that bear fruit with seed in it, according to their various kinds." And it was so. . . And there was evening, and there was morning—the third day. Genesis 1:11,13

God made two great lights—the greater light to govern the day and the lesser light to govern the night. He also made the stars. . . And there was evening, and there was morning—the fourth day. Genesis 1:16,19

FACT # 3 – THE SECOND LAW OF THERMODYNAMICS

The Second Law of Thermodynamics disproves both The Big Bang Theory and The Theory of Organic Evolution.

3-a. Disproving The Big Bang Theory

The universe is extremely precise, orderly, and equipped to support life on earth.

A year is 365.2422 days. / The seasons continually repeat in order. / The sun unceasingly rises and sets. / A day is always 24 hours. / Tides regularly ebb and flow. / NASA can calculate precisely where to place a satellite. / Halley's comet is visible to the naked eye every 77 years.

All its components are compiled, arranged, and programmed as required for life to exist here, and every form of life is equipped to function within this environment.

The sun shines in the day and plants use it to grow (leaves facing up and petals opening to receive its energy). / Trees shed their leaves in the fall before the snows come, which would weigh down their limbs and break them off. / Birds migrate south for the winter at the same time their food supply disappears (using the sun, the stars, and the earth's magnetic field for navigation). [50] / Bats and hamsters eat more in the fall, then hibernate through the winter--their body temperature dropping and their breathing and heart-rate slowing down--when their food supply disappears. / Animals mate so their offspring are born in the spring when they are easily camouflaged and have the summer to grow in strength. (If a deer mates in the summer, the embryo barely grows at all for four to five months so the baby is still born in the spring). [19D] / Animals native to the seashore have "built in clocks" coordinated with the ebb and flow of the tide which continue to work even when they are taken inland. [50] / Nocturnal animals are perfectly equipped for functioning at night and diurnal animals are perfectly equipped for functioning during the day. / Cell division is dependent upon the earth's magnetic field. [12] / The air is mixed in part by the moon's gravitational pull, enabling animals to breathe and survive.

The universe's order, however, is breaking down--moving unceasingly toward chaos--and its ability to function is continually decreasing. (This clearly speaks of creation, as Somebody had to organize it and wind it up, in order for it to be able to become disorganized and wind down.) This phenomenon is observable in many realms: the sun is cooling and getting smaller, the strength of the earth's magnetic field is decreasing, the earth's rotation is slowing, and the moon is moving away from the earth, just to mention a few. It's important to note that if any one of these processes were concluded, no life could exist on earth. This relentless process of decay is so pervasive, affecting every observable part of the universe, and so unchanging, that it is formally accepted as an irrefutable law of physics: "The Second Law of Thermodynamics."

For the creation was subjected to frustration, not by its own choice, but by the will of the one who subjected it, in hope that the creation itself will be liberated from its bondage to decay and brought into

the glorious freedom of the children of God. Romans 8:20,21

In the beginning you laid the foundations of the earth, and the heavens are the work of your hands. They will perish, but you remain; they will all wear out like a garment. Psalm 102:25, 26

The Big Bang Theory, which again says that the universe is the result of a giant, unplanned, and uncontrolled explosion, suggests that all of this order--which is continually moving toward disorder--just happened. This is like suggesting that an explosion at a building supply company created a house which then began to decay.

3-b. Disproving the Theory of Organic Evolution

This universal law of decay applies also to chemical compounds--such as the molecules which form the living cell--and is evidence against the Theory of Organic Evolution as well. Remember that the Theory of Organic Evolution claims that the first life form came into existence as a result of the sun heating the earth's surface. The sun's energy supposedly caused some atoms and molecules--which just happened to be lying around together in the mud--to arrange themselves into a more complex pattern. They supposedly became an organized cell (unexplainably enclosed inside a cell membrane) as opposed to just individual atoms and molecules. This newly organized and enclosed bit of matter is said to have not only been complex enough to support life (which would probably require more complexity than the space shuttle), it was actually said to have become "living." What we see in the real world, however--totally contrary to this theory--is that chemical compounds when left to themselves tend to break down into their more basic elements. Molecules tend to break down into their component atoms; they do not align themselves with other elements becoming more complex (nor do they wrap themselves inside cell membranes, nor do they come to life). The only way things become more complex is when some outside intelligent agent exerts control over them. Living things become more complex by the power of God, while non-living things do not. In other words, there is an ability--provided by God--which enables living things to take the sun's energy (along with other required resources) to grow more complex. Living plants and animals grow in size and, thus, complexity--as determined by quantity of cells. This is an ability which non-living matter does not have. If this ability were present in all matter--instead of being limited exclusively to living things ("matter" where life is present)--there would be no difference between a dead stick and the living tree from which it came. We would be able to grow either one of them by sticking them in the ground and letting the sun shine on them. What actually happens, however, is that the tree (which has life) uses the sun's energy to grow (thereby becoming more complex), while the stick simply gets warm. This "ability" for living things to grow is totally unexplainable apart from the power of God and is scientifically referred to as "Teleonomy."

FACT # 4 - THE 'LAW OF BIOGENESIS' (No Life In The Laboratory!)

Closely related to this universal decay of non-living chemical compounds (the chemical side of the Second Law of Thermodynamics) is another law of physics known as "The Law of Biogenesis." Because reality clearly shows that life could not have come into existence by accident (it is more than just chemicals, it requires enormous complexity, and chemical compounds not influenced by an outside

intelligent agent tend to break down), this obviously means that living things only come from other living things. If you want to grow a flower, you must start with a flower; if you want to grow algae, you must start with algae (unless you are God). Formally stated, this law says, “Life only comes from life! Spontaneous generation has never occurred!” [22]

Then God said, “Let the land produce vegetation: seed-bearing plants and trees on the land that bear fruit with seed in it, according to their various kinds.” And it was so. . . And there was evening and there was morning—the third day. Genesis 1:11,13

God made the wild animals according to their kinds, the livestock according to their kinds, and all the creatures that move along the ground according to their kinds. And God saw that it was good. Genesis 1:25

{Comedy Break}

There are Evolutionists who spend their entire careers in laboratories trying to “create life,” trying to exert control over non-living matter in hopes that it will begin living. They are combining various substances--such as ammonia, hydrogen, methane, and water--then injecting these new compounds with electricity (kind of like Dr. Frankenstein, on a microscopic level). Why are they doing this? Why are they applying all of this time, energy, money, education, intelligence, and technology to try to create life? To prove that it could have happened by accident (“in the beginning”). None of the amino acids which have been produced by these experiments could ever form life, as they have all been mixtures of both the right-handed and left-handed variety. “Life” absolutely requires that all amino acids be of the left-handed variety. A single right-handed one, in a string of left-handed ones, destroys all possibilities of life. [9]

FACT # 5 - MUTATIONS & NEW SPECIES

Mutations cannot change one species into another! First of all, mutations never add new DNA information; they either duplicate what is already present or they omit some. (DNA is the genetic information contained in the living cell which determines the characteristics and functions of a species. The DNA of a parrot determines everything from the size, shape, color, and location of its beak to the speed at which its heart will beat while resting. The DNA of a flower determines everything from the quantity, color, thickness, and location of its petals to its ability to take in energy from the sun.) If an organism is born with a mutation, it may end up with too many of something which the species normally has (i.e. a dog born with five legs), or missing something the species normally has (i.e. a dog born with three legs), but it is not going to end up with something new (i.e. a dog born with a wing). Second, even if mutations did add new information, the chances of a species mutating into something viable is mathematically impossible. The chance of a species having a single beneficial mutation is about 1 in 20 (5% or .05). The chance of a species having two beneficial mutations in a row is about 1 in 400 (.05 x .05 = .0025). The chance of a species having five beneficial mutations in a row is about 1 in 3,200,000 (.05 x .05 x .05 x .05 x .05 = .000003125). The chance of a species having enough beneficial mutations in a row to change into a viable new species is “**NOT!**” Third, regarding animals, it is biologically impossible. A mutation of only one-billionth of an animal’s entire genetic make up (one-billionth of its genome) is terminal, and a mutation of only three sets of chromosomes will result in an animal’s death before it is mature enough to reproduce. Fourth, DNA has a built-in error

correction system which keeps a species from drifting genetically, thus keeping it from changing or terminating. Fifth, if a species could mutate into a different species, it would be inferior until it finally arrived (i.e. a fish swimming or walking with a half leg/half fin), and natural selection would ensure that it did not survive. It would be unable to catch prey or escape predators. A fin changing into a leg will be a bad fin, then a bad leg, before becoming a good leg. [12]

Regarding a theoretical common ancestor of apes and humans: Evolutionists have claimed that apes and humans are 98.4% genetically identical. If this was true, this extremely enormous 1.6% genetic difference would make having a common ancestor absolutely impossible. Considering that a mutation of only 1 billionth (0.000000001) of an animal's genome would be fatal, a string of mutations amounting to 0.8% (.008) of its genome ($\frac{1}{2}$ of the 1.6% difference, which would be required to get either evolved from a common ancestor) could kill the species 8 million times before it could become ape or human. ($8,000,000 \times 0.000000001 = .008$ difference) [12] The claim that humans have evolved from fish (through amphibians, reptiles, etc.) is far more mathematically absurd.

God made the wild animals according to their kinds, the livestock according to their kinds, and all the creatures that move along the ground according to their kinds. And God saw that it was good. Then God said, "Let us make man in our image, in our likeness . . ." Genesis 1:25,26

Having similarity means having the same Creator, not the same ancestor.

FACT # 6 - COMPLEXITY OF LANGUAGES

If the Theory of Evolution was true and man did evolve from animals, then languages would have also evolved. As animals gradually turned into people, they would have begun developing the ability to speak and, over time, their language would have grown more complex. This also means that languages would have continued to evolve, as Evolution is never proposed to have stopped. What language studies show, however, is that some of the most ancient languages are the most complex--in regard to syntax, case, gender, mood, voice, tense, and, verb form. Some examples are Latin-- developed in 200 B.C., Greek--developed in 800 B.C., and Vedic Sanskrit--developed in 1500 B.C. [4] [22] (God created the first man and woman intelligent and intellectual so He could have an intellectual and loving relationship with them.)

But the LORD God called to the man, "Where are you?" He answered, "I heard you in the garden, and I was afraid because I was naked; so I hid." Genesis 3:9,10

Chapter B-6

THE FANTASY OF THE EVOLUTION EVIDENCE & MORE PROOF OF THE BIBLE'S TRUTH.

So, there is a lot of scientific evidence which clearly contradicts the Theory of Evolution, but isn't there also a lot of it which agrees? The answer to this question is, "**Absolutely not!**" Truth never contradicts truth, and true science never contradicts true science! What does exist is a plethora of false information which has been produced by the proponents of Evolution. In this section, you are going to learn of the many errors, deceptions, lies, and cover-ups which have taken place continually within the Evolutionist's Camp. (It takes a lot of work to make utter foolishness sound believable.)

A. FAULTY DATING METHODS, IGNORANCE & FOOLISH SUGGESTIONS

1 - RADIOMETRIC DATING

1-a. Organic Substance Dating; C-14 Radiocarbon Dating

Evolutionists claim they can use this dating method to determine how long ago a plant or an animal died, thus revealing how long ago it lived. The analysis is made by measuring the amount of Carbon 14 (C-14) radiation presently in an organism and then determining the speed at which this radiation is being depleted (the "rate of decay"). (This is analogous to finding a barrel of liquid which has a small hole in the bottom through which the liquid is escaping. The amount of liquid currently in the barrel is measured, as is the amount of liquid which leaks out each minute. Having these two measurements in hand, Evolutionists would lead us to believe that they can determine how long the hole has been in the barrel.)

So what is this Carbon 14 radiation (the liquid in the barrel analogy)? Carbon 14 radiation is actually radioactive atoms. These atoms are produced as cosmic rays strike the earth's atmosphere. These C-14 atoms--once produced--mix with oxygen atoms to form radioactive carbon dioxide. This radioactive carbon dioxide then spreads throughout the earth's atmosphere and is absorbed by plants as they "breathe in" carbon dioxide. Animals then pick up this radiation as they eat the plants which have absorbed it. At the point of death, neither a plant nor an animal normally receives any more of this

radiation, and all that had previously been received continues to decay. (Radioactive material is always decaying.) At this point, it is said that their “radiocarbon clocks have begun to tick.” (In our barrel analogy, we can say that at the point of death, the lid is put on the top of the barrel so that no more liquid is added, and that which is inside continues to leak out through the hole.)

This dating method, however, is not nearly as useful or trustworthy as Evolutionists would have us believe. It suffers from six different problems. (1st) The amount of C-14 radiation forming in the earth’s atmosphere may vary and not all species of plants accept it. Different plants, different times, and the likes and dislikes of different animals could each have an extremely large effect on the test results. Evolutionists, therefore, do not know how much radiation was present in a species at the point of death (how much liquid was in the barrel when the lid was put on). (2nd) It is not known if the decay rate in the organism has remained constant over time. (They do not know if the leak was ever restricted or if the hole has changed in size.) (3rd) The C-14 decay rate fluctuates during testing, thus, all results are questionable. (The liquid does not leak out of the barrel in a consistent manner during testing.) (4th) C-14 has a relatively short “life” (period of decay) and using this dating method on organisms thought to be more than 5,000 years old is useless. (After 5,000 years, any barrel should be empty. Attempting to measure a leak after 5,000 years or evaluating an occasional residual drip is useless.) (5th) C-14 dating does not work on thoroughly mineralized fossils. (If the barrel has totally decayed, this test is useless.) (6th) Before the world-wide flood (in the days of Noah), there was a protective vapor canopy around the earth (as there is today around Jupiter, Venus, and Saturn). Scientists believe that this canopy would have kept C-14 radiation from forming in the earth’s atmosphere.

And God said, “Let there be an expanse between the waters to separate water from water.” So God made the expanse and separated the water under the expanse from the water above it. And it was so. God called the expanse “sky.” And there was evening, and there was morning—the second day. And God said, “Let the water under the sky be gathered to one place, and let dry ground appear.” And it was so. God called the dry ground “land,” and the gathered waters he called “seas.” Genesis 1:6-10

Organisms, therefore, which had lived before the flood, including all of those that died in it (which is where most of the fossils around the world come from) would have very little, if any, of this radiation. (The lid may have never been off the barrel for the liquid to be poured in.) This would not only explain why some fossils have so little C-14 radiation (and why Evolutionists say they are millions of years old) but may help explain how people were able to live to such great ages before the flood. C-14 radiation speeds up the aging process; being shielded from it would slow it down.

Altogether, Adam lived 930 years, and then he died. Genesis 5:5

Here are a few examples of the faulty results which have been obtained using Carbon 14 dating. A thirty-year-old seal carcass was tested and showed to be 4,600 years old. A fresh seal carcass showed to be 1300 years old. A living clam showed to be 3,000 years old. Living mollusks showed to be 2,300 years old. [6] [16A] [32]

- 1-b. Inorganic Substance Dating “Potassium-Argon Dating”**
 - “Uranium-Lead Dating”**
 - “Rubidium-Strontium Dating”**
 - Etc.**

Evolutionists claim they can use these dating methods to determine the age of certain items which were never alive--inorganic substances such as rocks and minerals. Just as in Carbon 14 Dating, they seek to find out how much of a particular radioactive element is currently in a substance (the amount of radioactive potassium 40 in a rock for instance) and the rate at which that element is decaying. In this case, the radioactive element is not disappearing (like liquid leaking from a barrel); it is changing into a different substance (like a barrel of raw honey hardening into sugar). In the above example, when radioactive potassium 40 decays, it changes into Argon 40 gas, thus the name "Potassium-Argon Dating." In this case, Argon is referred to as the "daughter element" of potassium. (In our barrel analogy, sugar would be the "daughter element" of raw honey.)

Evolutionists (again in great error) claim that by measuring the amount of both the mother and daughter elements in a substance and the speed at which the transition from one to the other is occurring, they can determine the age of the rock or mineral in which it lies. (If we have a barrel of raw honey which is now half sugar, and it takes six months for raw honey in the laboratory to turn halfway into sugar, an Evolutionist would tell us that our barrel is now six months old.)

The problem here is that these dating methods suffer from many of the same problems as Carbon 14 Dating. (1st) We do not know how much of the daughter element was present to begin with. Evolutionists will usually assume there was none or that it can somehow be accurately estimated. (The honey could have been turning to sugar before it was ever put in the barrel.) (2nd) We cannot measure outside influences which may have affected the rate of decay. (Something such as temperature may have affected the speed at which the honey has hardened.) (3rd) Simple things such as groundwater movement can carry radioactive materials into or out of rocks through leaching. (Fresh or crystalized honey could have been added after the barrel was initially filled.) (4th) We do not know if decay rates have remained constant over time. (We do not know if the honey has been hardening at a constant rate.) [6] [11]

Here are a few examples of faulty results which have been obtained using these inorganic dating methods. Different radiometric dating methods used on the same geologic stratum often give different ages, sometimes by hundreds of millions of years. Two-hundred year old rocks (rocks formed from lava which flowed and hardened two-hundred years ago) showed to be up to 10 ½ billion years old. Basalt rock at the top of the Grand Canyon shows to be 270 million years older than basalt rock at the bottom of the Grand Canyon. (How did the older rock layers end up on top?) In many instances, the ages of fossils (as determined by the Carbon 14 dating method) differ enormously from the ages of the rocks in which the fossils have been found (as determined by these inorganic dating methods). [6] [11]

2 - CIRCULAR-REASONING

Let's say that while exploring an archaeological site, you have the pleasure of unearthing the tooth of a dinosaur. With great excitement, you take it to the natural science museum to find out what kind of dinosaur it came from. The museum curator directs you to the office of a man named Larry, one of two scientists who work at the museum. After inspecting the tooth, Larry tells you that the tooth belonged to a Tyrannosaurus Rex. He also tells you it is 190 million years old. You ask him, "Larry, how do you know it is 190 million years old?" He tells you that the Tyrannosaurus Rex is commonly found in what Evolutionists call the "Jurassic" level of the geologic column. He tells you this "Jurassic" level was laid down 190 million years ago and, therefore, any life forms found in it must

logically be 190 million years old. You ask him, “Larry, how do you know this so-called ‘Jurassic’ level was laid down 190 million years ago?” He then directs you to the office of the other scientist who works at the museum, a man named Curly.

After introducing yourself to Curly, you ask him, “How do you know that the so-called ‘Jurassic’ level of the geologic column was laid down 190 million years ago?” He tells you that Tyrannosaurus Rex fossils are often found in this particular level of the column. He tells you the Tyrannosaurus Rex lived 190 million years ago, therefore, the layer where its fossils are found must logically be 190 million years old. You ask him, “Curly, how do you know the Tyrannosaurus Rex lived 190 million years ago?” He then directs you to the office of the other scientist who works at the museum, the man named Larry. *** This faulty method of verification is called “circular-reasoning” and does, of course, prove nothing. (A’s proof is B, yet B’s proof is A.) Unfortunately, this line of reasoning is used on a regular basis to verify the dates which are assigned to the various rock layers and the fossils they contain. (When a fossil is used to “verify” the age of a particular layer of the geologic column, it is called an “index fossil.”) [22]

{Comedy break}

One of the “index fossils” which Evolutionists previously used to “prove” that certain layers of the geologic column were 70 million (or more) years old, was a fish called a “Coelacanth.” This fish, according to Evolution, had been extinct for at least 70 million years. Whenever a fossil was found, this supposedly proved that the rock layer in which it was found was at least 70 million years old. The use of this fish as an “index fossil” was discontinued, however, when Evolutionists discovered that fishermen had been catching them. [14] [19L] [32]

3 - LIGHT SHIFTED TO THE “RED SIDE”

Remember, according to the Big Bang Theory, the universe began as the result of a giant accidental explosion: the “Big Bang.” This theory suggests that a long, long time ago, there existed an object, creatively referred to as the “Primordial Atom.” This object (which can neither be explained nor verified) is suggested to have contained all the matter and energy of the universe. One day (for some unknown reason) this object decided to blow up. As a result of this (unverifiable) explosion (and by some unknown means), all the stars were supposedly formed. Later, as the result of the (unexplained and unverifiable) explosions of some of these stars (and by other unknown means), all the planets were supposedly formed. (Later, according to Organic Evolution, life somehow began and the rest is, well — more imagination.)

Now, what evidence has been found in support of this amazingly comprehensive theory? What apparently magnificent discovery has been made that enables the Evolutionists to understand this most wondrous chain of theoretical events? The answer: When we look out at the distant galaxies, most of the light appears red; it is shifted to the “red side.” That’s it! That’s the greatest piece of evidence offered in support of the imagined Big Bang.

So what is this red shift, what does Evolution say that it means, and what does it really mean? The light coming in from a distant star would appear different (it would have a different “shift”) if the star were standing still (relative to our position), moving toward us at a very high rate of speed, or moving away from us at a very high rate of speed. The frequency and wavelength would be different as they struck the earth. (This could be compared to a person throwing rocks at a target, one rock each

second, each one thrown identically. There is going to be a different effect upon the target, depending upon whether the person is standing still, running toward the target, or running away from it.) A shift in color toward the red side (also known as the “long” side) can mean that the object being viewed is moving away from us at a very high rate of speed. A shift toward the blue (or the “short” side) can mean that the object being viewed is moving toward us at a very high rate of speed. (Astronomers would refer to this as the “Doppler effect.”) Evolutionists, noting that most of the objects in the universe have a red shift, claim this is evidence which shows that the universe is expanding out from a single point. All of the objects are supposedly moving away from the point where the theoretical “Big Bang” occurred--from the point where the so-called “Primordial Atom” supposedly sat.

There are, however, not only other explanations for a red shift, but also evidence which shows that one of these other factors must be the cause. (1) First of all, the simple fact that there are some galaxies with a blue shift is a major problem to this supposed “Big Bang” expansion. If the universe were truly expanding outward from an original “point” and the red shift was the evidence, then all the galaxies would show a red shift in a predictable pattern. The galaxies closest to us (those on the same side of the supposed explosion as our own Milky Way galaxy) would be basically motionless relative to our position, as we would be moving together away from the “point of explosion.” They would show little or no red shift at all. The galaxies on the opposite side of the “point of explosion” would show the reddest shift as we would be moving away from each other the fastest. All the other galaxies would fit smoothly into a predictable pattern of degrees of red based upon their angle of movement away from us. There would be no galaxies with a blue shift. (2) Another problem facing this ‘red shift means movement’ theory is the fact that there are some individual objects in the universe which have light shifted to the red side in varying degrees (i.e., they appear—at this very moment—to be moving away from us at more than one speed). (This is analogous to the right side of a car driving away from us at forty miles per hour, while the left side drives away at sixty.) (3) This same problem also exists in regard to certain “galaxy pairs.” There are some galaxies which are positioned very close to each other, some of which are even connected by a “bridge of luminous matter,” which also have light with different red shifts. (This would be like two cars chained together, moving away from us at two different speeds, one driving at forty miles per hour and the other at sixty.) (4) A fourth problem is that the universe is not at all uniform, as would be the case in an unhindered explosion. There are star clusters--like the Milky Way--in some areas and vast empty spaces in others. [5] [11][19H] (Evolutionists have now invented a new theory to explain these vast empty spaces. They suggest matter is there; it just can’t be seen. They call this imaginary substance “dark matter.”)

In regard to other causes of a red shift, scientists have verified one factor and suspect several others. The known factor, which was originally predicted by Albert Einstein, is gravity, which can cause light waves to stretch out and, thus, redden. [15C] The suspected causes are the rotational movement of the universe (a circular movement of the galaxies as opposed to an outward movement), photon decay (a phenomenon also known as “tired light”) [5] [11] [15C], floating particles of matter in intergalactic space, and the fact that light has a natural tendency to shift to the red side. [12]

4 - STARS MILLIONS OF LIGHT-YEARS AWAY

If the universe has only been in existence for about six thousand years (stars included), then how can we see the light of a star which is a million light-years away? In other words, if there is a star at such a distance from the earth that it takes a million years for its light to travel this far, then doesn’t

this mean the light which we now see had to have begun its trip a million years ago? Doesn't this mean that the star must be at least a million years old? The answer to this question is "No!" And in order to understand why, we need to consider the answer to a different question: "Which came first, the chicken or the egg?" You see, the answer to how this chicken-to-egg-to-chicken cycle began tells us something about the beginning of the entire universe. When God brought it into existence, it was already mature. The first chicken began as a chicken. It was not a fertilized cell which had to grow into a fetus while developing a protective egg shell which then had to hatch and grow up.

So God created the great creatures of the sea and every living and moving thing with which the water teems, according to their kinds, and every winged bird according to its kind. . . And there was evening and there was morning—the fifth day. Genesis 1:21,23

Nor was Adam ever a fertilized egg cell, swimming around with the biological beginnings of the rest of the life on earth. (Nor did he have a navel.) This "created maturity" was not only the way God made living things,

Then God said, "Let the land produce vegetation: seed-bearing plants and trees on the land that bear fruit in it, according to their various kinds." And it was so. . . And there was evening, and there was morning—the third day. Genesis 1:11,13

it was, in all probability, the way He made everything else in the universe. We do know for sure that He either created the stars in a mature state (with the light already here) or caused the light to move at such a speed as to arrive shortly after their creation.

And God said, "Let there be lights in the expanse of the sky to separate the day from the night, and let them serve as signs to mark seasons and days and years, and let them be lights in the expanse of the sky to give light on the earth." And it was so. Genesis 1:14,15

Actually, a higher light speed "in the beginning" may not have required extra intervention by God. There is a book titled "Star Light and Time," by Astro-Physicist Dr. Russell Humphreys, which reportedly explains this star-light and distance puzzle. Dr. Humphreys has reportedly taken assumptions about the universe which can be made from the Bible, as opposed to the popular ones taken from the Theory of Evolution, and he has applied them to some of Albert Einstein's calculations. According to the results, Adam evidently could have been viewing the stars created on day four by the end of day six, without extra supernatural intervention. [29]

There may also be another answer to this puzzle. There is evidence for (as well as against) the belief that the speed of light is not constant, that it is actually decreasing over time. If it is decreasing, this is undoubtedly related to the Second Law of Thermodynamics. [4]

5 - STALACTITES AND STALAGMITES

Stalactites are the icicle shaped mineral deposits (most often calcium carbonate) seen hanging from the roofs of various caves. A stalactite forms when water--filtering through rocks and earth, then into a cave--picks up minerals. As the water drips to the floor, it leaves some of these minerals hanging from the roof. Over an extended period of time, as this filtering and cohesion process continues, these mineral deposits grow longer and longer and result in these rock-hard icicle shapes. Some of the minerals which drip to the ground in the water pile up, forming the standing inverted icicle shapes known as stalagmites. Some Evolutionists claim this process takes millions of years to occur and, therefore, these caves and the earth are millions of years old. A fact commonly ignored in

Evolutionist's circles, however, is that there are many good-size stalactites which have formed under man-made structures around the world: bridges, shopping centers, schools, universities, etc. There are three-foot long stalactites under the Lincoln Memorial, which was built between 1915 and 1922. [19-B] [28]

6 - MOTH POPULATION COLOR SHIFT

During the last half of the 19th century, evolutionists in England reported a change in the population of a species of moth: The population's minority became the majority. This species, scientifically classified as "Biston Betularia," is commonly referred to as the "Peppered Moth." Originally, according to the reports, the vast majority of these moths had been a speckled light grey color, while the remaining minority were black. Over a 47 year period, however, the population shifted and the black moths grew to be the majority--reportedly achieving 98%. Evolutionists excitedly claimed that this population color shift was "Evolution in process" and was undeniable proof of their theory. In reality, as you will see from the events which took place (which are herein described), this change lends absolutely no support to the Theory of Evolution.

Peppered Moths often rest on the trunks and branches of trees. Not surprisingly, they are a common snack for birds. In 1848, there were almost no factories in England and very little air pollution. With the coming of the industrial revolution, however, this all changed. They soon had plenty of both. In addition to affecting the air, the pollution also had a significant effect on the trees. It killed "lichens," a tiny plant which grew on the bark of most of them. These lichens gave the bark a very light appearance similar to that of the light grey moths. As these lichens died, the tree bark began to take on a much darker appearance. As a result, the light grey moths--which formerly blended in with the trees--began to stand out. They began to be eaten more often by the birds. The darker ones--which formerly stood out--became harder to see. They were eaten less often. Over time, with fewer grey moths to reproduce and more black ones, the population shifted. Later, as a result of England decreasing its pollution, the trees started gaining back their lighter appearance and the moth population began shifting back in the opposite direction. [29] [16B]

The point in this story which the evolutionists ignore is the fact that these two colors are natural (i.e. they were already present) in this moth species and a population shift from one to the other requires no changes in the DNA. This is natural selection, but has nothing to do with mutation--with an altering of the species. This shift is no different than breeding pets to enhance a particular characteristic. If we begin breeding only dark colored cats, removing any with light colored fur, will we ultimately end up with a new species of animal, or simply a darker population of cats?

B. FOSSILS AND THE GEOLOGIC COLUMN

1 - WHAT IS THE GEOLOGIC COLUMN?

Imagine that you have just been handed the most incredibly delicious serving of lasagna. (Readers may substitute baklava or a chocolate covered ten-layer cake with amaretto, if your taste buds run more in that direction.) You gently set the plate before you and, almost without thinking, begin counting each marvelously created layer. Now, with fork in hand, you carefully begin taking it apart one layer at a time, thinking of nothing other than the time, ingredients, and processes which went into making it. (Well, probably not, but for our example you do.) You closely examine each layer, carefully noting their individual characteristics, the elements they contain, and the order in which they were laid.

Now, imagine that this most delectable little treat has grown to be the size of a house and has turned into layers of grass, dirt, and rock. (Sorry, we had to come back to the subject.) Imagine that you are now standing before a house-size section of earth which has somehow been cut out of the ground and lifted up so as to be viewed from the side. The top layer is grass, which is growing out of the second layer which is dirt, and down below this are several layers of rock. It is these layers of rock--stacked on top of each other in a pile (or a "column")--which are referred to as the "geologic column." Inside these layers of rock are often found the fossil remains of life forms which died and were buried as these layers formed.

Now, if we were actually to go out and begin digging holes around the world, we really would find rock layers in many places. It is what the Theory of Evolution says about them, however, that keeps us within the realm of imagination. According to this theory, these rock layers were laid down at various times over billions of years and supposedly contain the fossil remains of life forms which are said to have been evolving upward throughout this period. More specifically, this theory suggests that the bottom layer of this column formed around 4 ½ billion years ago and contains the fossil remains of the very first life form on earth (something called "blue green algae"). The next layer is suggested to have formed approximately 2 ½ billion years ago and supposedly contains the fossil remains of what this original life form had evolved into (some kind of bacteria and/or other multi-cellular life). This imaginary time pattern is then continued on up to the top layer, which is said to have formed about 10,000 years ago and supposedly contains the fossil remains of the most recent and highly evolved life forms to be preserved in the fossil record.

I have included, on the next page, somewhat of a brief rendering of this imaginary "geological time chart" as proposed by the Theory of Evolution. What is most important to observe is that Evolution claims there were at least 2 million years which elapsed between the formation of any two of these layers. It actually claims that the top two layers formed approximately 2 million years apart and the rest were separated by even greater lengths of time. You should also note it proposes that the dinosaurs died out approximately 140 million years before modern man ever came on the scene. This, of course, like every other aspect of the Theory of Evolution, is utterly ridiculous. As you are about to see, these rock layers did not form over a period of billions of years, but rather, much closer to the time that it takes to make lasagna. Most of the layers around the world are the result of the world-wide flood which God sent in the days of Noah as a judgment upon sin. (Not surprisingly, various Evolutionist's geological time charts often disagree with each other in many areas.)

The Theory of Evolution's Imaginary Geological Time Chart

Layer's claimed age.	Layer's creative title	Theorized Features and Events of Layers & Ages
10 T	Recent	Modern Humans (<i>Including Handsome Princes</i>)
2 M	Pleistocene	Wide Spread Ice-Age, Ape-Men
10 M	Pliocene	Mountains Form, Mammals Get Larger, Ape-Men
25 M	Miocene	Grasslands, Mammals, Apes, Whales
40 M	Oligocene	Mammals, Sabertooth Tigers
55 M	Eocene	Modern Birds, Giant Birds, Mammals
65 M	Paleocene	Age of Mammals Begins, Primates
140 M	Cretaceous	Insects, Flowers, Last Dinosaurs
190 M	Jurassic	Dinosaurs, Birds, Mammals, Reptiles
230 M	Triassic	Reptile Age, Dinosaurs
280 M	Permian	Forests, Mass Marine Extinction
310 M	Pennsylvanian	Swamps, Coal Forests, First Reptiles
345 M	Missippian	Fern Forests, Amphibian Age (<i>Including Frogs</i>)
405 M	Devonian	Fish Age, Amphibians, Land Animals
425 M	Silurian	Shell Fish, First Land Plants, Fungi
500 M	Ordovician	Primitive Fish, Seaweed, Fungi
570 M	Cambrian	First Marine Invertebrates, Shellfish
2.5 B	Proterozoic	Bacteria, Algae, Multi-cellular Life
4.5 B	Archeozoic	Earth's Crust Solidifies, First Life

T=Thousands of years ago, M=Millions of years ago, B=Billions of years ago.

2 - HOW DID THESE ROCK LAYERS FORM AND WHAT IS A FOSSIL?

The first thing we need to do in considering the geological evidence is to understand how these

rock layers formed and how life forms came to be trapped inside. How did plants, animals, and people get stuck inside of rocks? These layers of rock actually began as layers of sediment (sand, mud, etc.) which had been deposited by water. As water moves rapidly across an area of land, it will stir up dirt and sand and carry it along with it. As it slows down or stops, the dirt and sand, being heavier than the water, will settle to the bottom forming one or more layers. Subsequently, if more water comes in, it will bring in more sediment, thereby depositing one or more additional layers on top of the one (s) already laid. Any larger objects which happen to get swept along with this water and also sink to the bottom can become buried within these layers of sediment. After a relatively short period of time, this sediment--if it contains the necessary clay and limestone--will coalesce into solid rock, permanently encasing any totally covered objects inside. Any of these objects which happen to be of an organic nature (plants, animals, or the unrepentant people whom God judged with the world-wide flood) will gradually decay, and their bodies will be replaced by the minerals which surround them. Ultimately, the objects themselves will cease to exist, but their exact shapes will be maintained by the minerals which replace them. This is the definition of a fossil. This is generally what geologists find today in their excavations, although some of the larger dinosaur fossils which have been found are actually still part bone.

3 - WHAT DOES THE GEOLOGICAL EVIDENCE SHOW?

Having considered the processes which have resulted in these rock layers being formed and the shapes of these plants, animals, and unrepentant people being preserved, let's now take a look at the geological findings around the world to see what they actually show. This information is being provided in two sections. In the first, you will learn of the geological evidence which clearly supports the claims of the Bible and clearly contradicts the claims of the Theory of Evolution. In the second, you will see an even greater list of evidence showing the reality of the world-wide flood.

3-a. The Geological Evidence Shows That The Bible is True and The Theory of Evolution Is False.

This information is being presented in three steps. First, a claim of the Theory of Evolution is stated. Second, what the Bible says regarding the same subject is stated. Third, the geological evidence found pertaining to this subject is described.

Claim # 1 The age of the layers.

Evolution = There were at least 2 million years which elapsed between the formation of any two layers of the geologic column.

Bible = The earth is approximately 6,000 years old, and there was a world-wide flood which would have resulted in a wide spread and rapid depositing of these sedimentary layers. [*Genesis 6-8*]

Fact = Experiments in a laboratory have shown that various silts tend to settle in like layers (red sand in one layer, white in another, mud in another, etc.) when circulated together in water-filled flumes. This means that many of these layers may have been created by the same rush of water. [12]

Fact = There are fossils of organic organisms which extend up through two or more layers of the geologic column. (These are called “poly-straight” fossils.) A classic example is a fossil of a particular plant (called a *Lapittidendrum*) which was found extending up through two of these layers. These particular two layers are so widespread, they are found on three separate continents. If a plant or animal is only partially buried by a layer of sediment, then a second layer must come soon after and cover the rest of it in order for the whole thing to become fossilized. If it does not, then the upper section--the portion extending out of the first layer of sediment--will be eaten or decay away. It is impossible for a portion of a plant or animal to survive for 2 million years exposed to nature while waiting for the next layer of sediment to finish covering it. Poly-straight fossils cannot be created unless multiple layers are formed in a short period of time. [4] [12]

Fact = The layers of the geologic column are random, as would be expected after a world-wide flood. Less than 20% of the entire earth’s land surface has even 30% of these so-called “geologic ages” in the right consecutive order as required by Evolution. [11]

Fact = The layers of the geologic column are flat on top and bottom; there are no water channels which have been cut through the upper most parts. If each of these layers had actually had its turn at being the surface of the ground, and each had therefore been exposed to the rain for 2 million or more years, then the water running across their surfaces--headed to the nearest creek--would have cut channels (or grooves) into them. [4]

Fact = The movement of water in the ocean can cover an extremely large area with sediment in a very short period of time. Scientists have observed areas as vast as 100,000 square miles being covered at speeds of up to 60 miles per hour. These oceanic forces are known as “Turbidity Currents.” [10]

Claim # 2 The time of dinosaurs, mammals, and man.

Evolution = The last dinosaurs died out approximately 75 million years before the first mammals and approximately 140 million years before modern man. The great cats (Saber-toothed Tigers) died out approximately 40 million years before modern man.

Bible = God created all land animals--including the great cats and dinosaurs--on the same day He created people. [*Genesis 1:24-31*] The Bible also speaks of encounters between dinosaurs and people. [*Job 40:15-24, 41:1-34*].

Fact = Some of the larger dinosaur fossils which have been found are still part bone. They have not undergone complete fossilization. Because fossilization occurs in a relatively short period of time, these dinosaurs could not have died more than ten

thousand years ago. Some of the DNA is still “readable” and DNA can not “survive” for more than ten thousand years. [13] [19-B] [29] Chicken bones and wood have been known to fossilize in only five to ten years.[13] Many items have been found fossilized as the result of a volcanic eruption in New Zealand in 1886. These included a bowling hat, sandwiches, and a bag of flour. [19J] In 1986, a scientist was issued a U.S. patent for making petrified wood. [29] Scientists have been able to fossilize shrimp in only four to six weeks. [29] Fact = There have been excavated from one layer of the geological column at Glen Rose, Texas, the following items: fifty-seven “fully” human footprints and a human finger (claimed by Evolution to have been in existence for only the last 3½ million years); seven footprints of giant cats, which would have stood six feet tall at the shoulder (claimed by Evolution to have lived about 40 million years ago); a dinosaur known as “Acrocanthasaurus,” along with different kinds of dinosaur footprints (the last dinosaurs claimed by Evolution to have died out over 100 million years ago); a plant called “Lapittidendrum” (claimed by Evolution to have been in existence approximately 250 million years ago); and an animal known as a Trilobite (claimed by Evolution to have been in existence approximately 550 million years ago). Again, all of these fossils were excavated from the same layer of the geologic column; thus, they all lived at the same time. [12]

Fact = An octagon shaped iron hammer with a fossilized wooden handle was excavated from the same layer of the geologic column where dinosaur footprints and remains have been found. This hammer was well designed and forged by a process that science is unable to duplicate today. It is almost pure iron with a very small amount of chlorine and sulfur. (Scientists today cannot compound iron with chlorine.) [12]

Fact = There are written historical accounts of people, including Alexander the Great and Saint George, encountering giant reptiles which we would most likely classify as dinosaurs. [13] [19B] Some of these accounts come from the Welsh, the early Britons (who were the ancestors of the Welsh), the Saxons, Danes, Vikings, and others around the world. [15D] (The telling of the encounter of Saint George has been greatly altered at times to include much fantasy.)

Fact = There are ancient cave paintings of dinosaurs, mammoths, etc. indicating that the people who painted them were familiar with these creatures. [19-B]

Fact = The “Thunderbird,” made famous by the Sioux Indians of North America was based upon the sighting of an enormous winged reptile. [13] [19B]

Fact = There are legends from around the world of encounters between people and creatures matching the descriptions of dinosaurs. Legends almost always have some base in reality. These legends come from Egypt, France, China, Scandinavia, Ireland, India, Babylon, etc. [13] [15D][19B]

Fact = There have been reports for many years about sightings of enormous aquatic animals resembling the “dinosaur” paleontologists have named the “Plesiosaur.” These have come from around the world and include the famous Loch Ness Monster, whose sightings are recorded as far back as 565 A.D. Loch Ness Lake is an extremely deep lake which connects to the ocean. [19N] [23E] [47A]

Fact = In the Ndoki (en-DOE-key) region of the Northern Congo in Africa, there are 7½ million acres of dense jungle and treacherous swamp into which the natives of this area

seldom venture. Some of these natives report that this is the home of an animal they call “Mokele Mbembe.” They describe it as being brownish-gray, smooth skinned, much larger than an elephant, with a very long tail as powerful as a crocodile’s. [19C] [26] [46B] [47A] The natives of Gabon (which neighbors the Congo) report the same kind of animal. They call it “n’yamala”. According to Omni Magazine, when these natives were shown a picture of a “Brontosaurus” type dinosaur thought to resemble Mokele Mbembe, they identified it as n’yamala. [47A]

Fun Facts = Would you believe there are insects and fish which produce light (the lightning bug / fire fly, the hatchet fish, and the bristlemouth)? Would you believe there are sea creatures which can generate enough electricity to kill (the electric eel, electric ray, electric catfish, etc.)? Would you believe there is an insect which can produce a 212 degree F. (100 degree C.) exploding chemical mixture which it fires at predators — with an audible “pop” (the bombardier beetle)? Would you believe that the legends from ancient China about fire-breathing reptiles are not totally legend (leviathan)?

*Can you pull in the leviathan with a fishhook or tie down his tongue? . . . Firebrands stream from his mouth; sparks of fire shoot out. Smoke pours from his nostrils as from a boiling pot over a fire of reeds. His breath sets coals ablaze, and flames dart from his mouth. Job 41:1,19-21 [*** Read all of Job 41 for a complete description of this incredible creature.]*

Scientists have theorized that a fossil dinosaur which has been named “Parasaurolophus” may have had the same pyro abilities as the one which God referred to as Leviathan. (It was evidently not Leviathan, as it did not have “fearsome teeth” as the Bible says that Leviathan did.) Fossils show this duck-billed dinosaur had a long curved bony crest with hollow chambers connecting with its nostrils. This chambered structure began as the upper jaw and bridge of the nose, continued on back forming its forehead, and extended far up and over the back of the neck. (It was similar in shape to the beak, forehead, and feathered crest of a cardinal, except that it extended back much farther.) This unexplainable breathing passage may have very well been a chemical mixing chamber such as in the back of the Bombardier Beetle.

Claim # 3 Evolution of species and time.

Evolution = Life forms have been evolving upward into other life forms for billions of years: Invertebrates evolved into vertebrates, fish into amphibians, amphibians into reptiles, reptiles into birds and mammals, and ape-like mammals into humans. The layers of the geologic column were laid down at various times over these billions of years and contain the fossil remains of the life forms which were living at these various times.

Bible = God created everything in six literal 24-hour days, and He created humans as well as every kind of plant and animal as a totally unique and individual species. No species ever evolved from a different species. [*Genesis 1:11,21,25,26 & Genesis 2:1,2,7,19*]

Fact = If Evolution’s claims were true, then geologists should have found hundreds of thousands of in-between species fossils by now (i.e., salamander/fish or lizard/birds) and the museums should be packed full of them. The reality is, there has not been a single one found. Of the millions of fossils on display at museums around the world, there is not a genuine example of an invertebrate changing into a vertebrate, a fish changing into

an amphibian, an amphibian changing into a reptile, or a reptile changing into a bird or mammal. All the pictures which have been drawn and the models which have been created of supposed in-between species have been based upon error, fraud, speculation, and/or imagination, and this includes all of the supposed ape-men. (All of Evolution's so-called fossil evidence is discussed in detail in the next section.)

Fact = Fossils of all the various life forms have been found within the same sedimentary layers as their supposed evolutionary ancestors. In other words, the fossils of 100% birds have been found in the same sedimentary layer as the fossils of 100% reptiles the species from which they have supposedly evolved. This shows that the two species were always living at the same time (as they still are) and one could not, therefore, have evolved from the other. This is the case for all the species. Evolutionists will ignore a thousand fossils which contradict their theory while applying enormous amounts of time and effort promoting one which can be misinterpreted to fit their desired conclusions. [10] [11] [32]

Fact = "Fully" human fossils have been found in all levels of the geologic column. Some which were found in layers supposedly too old for human evolution to have even begun include the Calavaras skull, the Castenedolo skeletons, and Reck's skeleton. [4]

Fact = Human artifacts have been found in all layers of the geologic column. A few which were found in layers supposedly millions of years older than humans include: a metallic vase, a screw, nails, and a coin. [4]

3-b. The Geological Evidence Shows That The World-Wide Flood Described In The Bible Was A Reality.

The Bible tells us that several thousand years ago God judged the entire sinful world with a global flood. It tells us that He caused water to burst up from the ground and rain to come down from the sky for forty days. It says the water rose 20 feet above the highest mountains, killing almost every living creature that moved on the land or flew in the air. It also tells us that many years before this event, God told a man named Noah to build an enormous boat (called an ark). It says that by using this boat, he, his family, and males and females of every land and flying creature survived the flood, and were the only ones that did. If this is true (which it is!) then there should be an abundant amount of evidence left behind by such an earth-shattering event (which there is!) In order to more easily and adequately explain all of this evidence, I have included below some additional information on this event. Through it and the forthcoming list of evidence, you are going to see that the world-wide flood not only happened, it is the cause of much of the earth's present geological conditions. [The flood is described in Genesis chapters 6 through 8.]

Reality # 1 = The ark was big enough.

The ark was the size of a giant cargo ship and could have carried approximately 40 million pounds. It was 450 feet long, 75 feet wide, and 45 feet high, with three inner decks. This gave 135,000 square feet of floor space (450 feet x 75 feet x 4 levels) less

ramps and/or steps. Its cubic capacity has been compared to that of 170 railroad box cars. [Genesis 6:15,16] [24] [39]

There were a total of eight people on the ark: Noah and his wife, their three sons, and their wives. [Genesis 6:10,18]

There are less than 21,000 different types of land and flying animals classified today. There are approximately 6,500 reptiles, 9,700 birds and 4,500 mammals. [23F] (Notice that there are no in-between species.) Many of these are the same “kinds” as referenced in the Bible (i.e. Indian and African elephants). There were, therefore, far less than 21,000 “kinds” on the ark. Scientists estimate that there were probably around 5,000. [24]

All breeds of dogs came from an original “kind”; thus, there only had to be two dogs on the ark. Most breeds have been bred in only the last 300 years. [23G]

Evolutionists deceptively refer to these variations within a “kind” of animal (i.e. different dog breeds) as “Micro-Evolution,” in an effort to get people to believe in the imaginary changing of one species into another, which they call “Macro-Evolution.” As any animal breeder can tell you (or the scientists who have been breeding variations of fruit flies for the last 40 years) no changes of species ever occur. Sheep never bear anything but sheep, and dogs never bear anything but dogs.

Our all-knowing Creator put into the various “kinds” of animals the genetic ability to adapt to their environment (i.e. polar bears and brown bears), because He knew what the world was going to be like after the fall and flood (i.e. environmental extremes).

There are an insignificant number of “kinds” which have become extinct. (Claims to the contrary are lies!) Most fossils are of life forms still living today. [11]

Some reptiles swim (crocodiles, water snakes, water turtles, etc.) thus, they did not have to be on the ark.

Logic tells us that God would have sent very young (i.e. very small) animals onto the ark. Very few land or flying animals are as large as a man’s hand when born. Of the 6,500 species of reptiles and 9,700 species of birds, the absolute largest one at birth is the ostrich, whose egg is less than six inches in diameter. Of the 4,500 species of mammals, very few get larger than a good-size house cat. Dinosaurs also started out very small, as you will shortly see. (The largest one came out of a six inch egg). [46A]

The Encyclopedia (under the subject of “animals”) shows less than 75 land or flying creatures (non-domestic birds, reptiles, or mammals) which grow larger than a good size house cat. [23F] There are more than this, but not a great number more.

God caused the animals to go to the ark. Noah did not have to round them up.[Genesis 7:15]

God fed 5,000 people with five loaves of bread and two fish, and gave the nation of Israel water out of a rock. [Mark 6:38-44] [Exodus 17:6] He could have done the same here.

Reality # 2 = The earth was very different before the flood. Part of the following information is

theory, but it fits the evidence and agrees with the Bible, (two supports which the Theory of Evolution lacks.)

Before the flood there was a protective vapor canopy around the earth which came down as 40 days of rain. (Jupiter, Venus and Saturn also have cloud canopies around them.) [Genesis 1:6-10] [12] [14] [21]

Before this, the earth had never experienced rain; it had been watered by underground springs. People had, therefore, never seen a rainbow. [Genesis 2:6 & 9:13] [4]

This vapor canopy would have blocked out most of the sun's harmful radiation as well as protected the earth's magnetic field from decay, two factors which greatly affect the speed of the aging process. With this protection in place, life forms were able to live much longer before the flood. (Noah lived to be 950 years old and had 120 years to build the ark.) [Genesis 6:3, 9:29] [12] [14]

The vapor canopy and earth's magnetic field were mutually dependent on each other. The canopy kept the magnetic field from decaying and the magnetic field held the canopy in place. [12]

Bible translation note.... In the original Scripture (written by Moses) God calls the three areas above the earth the same name--"shamayim;" (1) where the birds fly, (2) where the sun, moon, and stars are located, and (3) where God's throne is located. In Genesis 1:8, some modern versions of the Bible translate the original Hebrew word "shamayim" into this word "heaven." The New International Version (my favorite), translates the word as "sky." The better translation is "heaven," because the word is used again in verse 14 in plural form. This is significant, in that verse 14 tells us God put lights in the expanse of the "heavens," the plurality allowing for the second one.

This vapor canopy also caused a "greenhouse-effect" around the earth which kept it universally warm. The poles were not very cold and the equator was not very hot. There are many species of warm weather plants and animals which have been found (frozen) at or near the poles: palm, redwood, and fruit trees, and woolly mammoths (which scientists believe were warm weather animals). When the canopy collapsed and the sky filled with smoke from volcanic activity (as the "springs of the great deep burst forth") [Genesis 7:11], it dropped the temperature of the earth to such a degree that scientists refer to this time as an "Ice Age." [12] [14] [19N] [32]

Some reptiles continue to grow in size throughout most of their lives [23H], and the extremely long life expectancy before the flood explains the size of some of the dinosaurs. Even though dinosaurs started out small, they had ample time to grow to be the giants that paleontologists have found. According to one source (which is in support of Evolution), the largest dinosaur eggs were only about 10 inches in length. [38] Sauropods--the largest dinosaurs found in the fossil record--came out of eggs which were from five to six inches in diameter. [46A] These were the enormous four-legged dinosaurs, with the long necks and the long tails (like the one pictured on the cover of this book). This group included the Brachiosaurus, Supersaurus, Ultrasaurus, etc., which in reality were all the same "kind" of dinosaur. [38] For a reptilian comparison, consider that sea turtles lay up to 200 eggs at one time. [23H] Assuming this mass of turtle eggs could be one-fourth the size of the mother (which is probably not possible), one egg would be 1/800th the size of the mother (1/4 divided by 200). A six-inch egg laid by a dinosaur 800 times the size of the egg would give us a dinosaur 400 feet long.

According to National Geographic Magazine, thousands of sauropod eggs/egg shells were found in an area less than one square mile (in Patagonia, Argentina), and evidence shows these embryos may have perished in a flood. [46A]

Beavers also continue to grow in size throughout most of their lives. [231] The remains of a twelve foot tall beaver have been found in the fossil record. [12]

The remains of only about 350 different “species” of dinosaurs have been found, representing approximately 50 different “kinds.” These 50 kinds (all being small when young) would also have fit easily into the ark. [28] [20] [24] (Evolutionists will claim that 10 sizes of the same dinosaur are 10 different species, and the same dinosaur found on three continents will be given three different names.)

Example: One book on dinosaurs shows the same silhouettes of various dinosaurs reproduced in multiple sizes, with a different name for each size. The author, no doubt, went to great extent to collect this information, but discovered that the similarities between the various “finds” were so close that he could use the same picture for many “different” dinosaurs. The book shows fifteen different dinosaur silhouettes which have been reproduced (with occasional slight modifications) ten or more times each. One was reproduced 19 times. In other words, this book shows there have been far more than 150 different names given to no more than fifteen different kinds of dinosaurs. [38]

One of the problems here (which can result in a single kind of dinosaur receiving many different names) is that a paleontologist who “discovers” a new species of dinosaur gets to name the species. He also experiences an increase in fame and job security. While it is certainly possible that many paleontologists have been unaware of previous discoveries of the same species of dinosaur they found and named, supersaurus-size egos are probably also a factor.

Example: An article which appeared in the Dallas Morning News reported the discovery of “a new species of dinosaur.” According to the article, “This new species looks like a smaller version of Triceratops.”

{Comedy break} If Evolutionary paleontologists really believe that dinosaurs bore offspring which were the same size as the adults, I’ve got a new theory on their extinction.

The atmospheric pressure also changed with the collapse of the canopy, and scientists believe the new lower pressure aided in the extinction of the dinosaurs. Many of the dinosaurs found in the fossil record could not have existed in today’s atmosphere. Their chest capacity shows their lungs would have been too small in relationship to the rest of their bodies to provide them with enough oxygen. [12] [21]

Bible scholars also believe the lower pressure caused Noah to get drunk on an amount of wine which before the flood would not have affected him. (The Bible tells us about this event but does not say God condemned it as a sin.) [Genesis 9:20-21]

There was an enormous amount of volcanic activity associated with the flood, as “the springs of the great deep burst forth.” These volcanic eruptions combined with the destructive force of the flood waters wreaked havoc on the surface of the earth. They created mountains, cut canyons, moved and deposited an immeasurable amount of sediment, and utterly changed the entire face of the earth. [Genesis 7:11] [2 Peter 3:3-7]

[4] [32] (If the ocean bottom was raised and the mountains were lowered—if the earth's surface was smooth like a ball—the water on the surface of the earth would be two miles deep.)[29]

These powerful forces created the Grand Canyon in Arizona (and far greater canyons which are under the ocean) and brought up iridium from the earth's interior. Iridium is found buried within the sedimentary layers. Evolutionists suggest that the Grand Canyon was eroded by the Colorado River over millions of years (but they have no explanation for the greater canyons under the ocean). Some of them also theorize that the iridium came from meteorites which struck the earth millions of years ago (killing all the dinosaurs). [4] [11] [13]

Reality # 3 = Evidence of the flood is all over the earth. The following is a very limited list of this evidence. (No one could possibly list it all.) As you read through it, you will see that there is no other plausible explanation for all that has been found.

All present mountains are covered with massive flood-laid layers of sedimentary rock. [32]

There are literally billions of fossils of air-breathing animals around the world buried in sedimentary layers deposited by water. In some places there are literally thousands of these jumbled together in massive heaps. [11] [19-B]

There are sea-life fossils on every mountain range around the world. [4] [14]

There are layers of sediment which are so widespread as to be found on three different continents, with plant and animal fossils extending up through two or more of these layers. [12]

The same sedimentary layers are found high in some places and low in others. For example, there is one particular layer of sediment on a cliff near the top of the Grand Canyon (which stands 800 feet above the surrounding floor) which is also found approximately 500 feet lower. This means that the water which deposited this sediment was at least 500 feet deep and possibly more than 800. [10]

Coal is carbonized plant material. It is found underground (i.e. covered by layers of sedimentary rock). It is plant material which was originally covered by mud, sand, etc., deposited by water. Coal deposits are found on every continent. [23J] In the United States, most of the coal deposits are the remains of the bark of trees. [11] Several of these deposits cover areas larger than the state of Illinois. There is only one plausible explanation for these massive amounts of plant material being covered by water-deposited sediment: a world-wide flood. This same thing has happened to trees which were blown into Spirit Lake in Washington by the volcanic eruption of Mt. Saint Helens in 1980. [11]

Coal forms quite rapidly. It does not take millions of years as Evolutionists would have us believe. It, as well as oil, has been produced in the laboratory in a very short period of time. There is no evidence that it is currently forming in any swamp or bog either, which is what Evolutionists suggest occurred in the past. [11]

The following items have been excavated from coal deposits: a gold chain, a spoon, a thimble, an iron pot, and a bell. [4]

Coal deposits are always associated with huge masses of marine fossils (i.e. sea life buried with tree bark). [11] [28]

Some of the fossilized trees in “petrified forests” are found buried at various angles within the sedimentary layers; some are even upside-down. In addition, some of them overlap each other in depth (i.e. the top of the tree below is level with the middle of the tree above). Most of the ones in Yellowstone National Park are missing their largest roots as well as most of their bark and smaller branches. Almost all of the ones which were buried prostrate are lying in the same direction, indicating that the same force (i.e. flood wave, mud slide, or volcanic eruption) knocked them down. These various positions, angles, and missing parts indicate that most of these trees had been ripped out of the ground (breaking off the roots), were jumbled around in water (knocking off the bark and smaller branches), and were buried at the same time (the overlapping of the trees above and below). These and other identical things happened to trees which were blasted into Spirit Lake in Washington by the volcanic eruption of Mt. Saint Helens in 1980. The growth rings in the trees above also match the growth rings in the trees below, indicating they were from the same forest and had experienced the same seasons. [11] [19L] Evolutionists claim that the different levels of trees were different forests which grew at different times over millions of years.

Lava (melted rock flowing up from volcanoes or volcanic vents in the earth) surfaced at some time in the past under water high up on many mountains around the world. When lava surfaces under water, it hardens differently than when cooled by exposure to the air and is called “pillow lava.” One place pillow lava can be seen is 1,700 feet up on Mt. Ararat in Turkey. This shows that water once covered all of these mountains. [21] [32]

There are over 270 mentions of the world-wide flood in ancient writings and legends, including Persian, Babylonian, Assyrian, ancient Egyptian, Chinese, Sanskrit, Aztec and Incan. [4] [14] [21] [39]

There is a point near the mountains of Ararat which is the geographical center of the earth. It is the point at which the distance to all other land areas on earth added together is the smallest. This area around Turkey, where Noah and his family would have settled after the flood, is also considered the “cradle of civilization.” It is accepted as being the beginning point for all of present “civilization.” [Genesis 8:4] [29]

Reality # 4 = The arrangement of the fossils within the geologic column is also evidence of the world-wide flood. The life forms were buried as we would expect: in a general logical sequence with many random exceptions.

In the bottom layers there are mostly sea life fossils. These life forms were already in the water and had a high specific density. (God gave aquatic animals a higher density than land animals. They must be able to live under water without having to struggle to stay submerged and must be able to withstand the water pressure.). This combination of location and density would have resulted in their being buried first. They would have

died from oxygen deprivation because of the mud in the flood waters as well as from the volcanic activity.

In the layers above these, amphibian fossils are generally found. Amphibians are medium density life forms which also live in or around the water and instinctively run to it in times of danger. This combination of density, location, and being acclimated to the water would have resulted in their being buried next. The medium density of an amphibian enables it to move around on the land as well as to swim under water without struggling to stay submerged.

In the layers above these, reptile fossils--including dinosaurs--are generally found. Many reptiles are also comfortable around water and few (if any) are smart enough to head for higher ground in the event of a flood. (They are a lot like Evolutionists: they see judgment coming, but they fail to seek salvation which is from above).

Nearer the top, the fossils of birds and mammals are commonly found. These animals (which have a low specific density) would have been most frightened of being overcome by water and would have instinctively gone to higher ground.

At the top of the column are the relatively few human fossils which have been found. During the flood, people would have survived the longest. They would have gone to the highest ground, climbed into trees or on structures which they had made, gotten into boats, built rafts, or clung to whatever they could find floating in the water. This and a person's low specific density means that most of them would have sunk after most of the sediment had been deposited. Most of their bodies, therefore, would have decayed (which happens rather quickly under water) rather than become fossilized. [12] [14]

C “MISSING LINKS” - A CHAIN OF LIES

If all the geological evidence, as well as everything else in life, disproves Evolution, then what about the various “missing link” fossils which Evolutionists claim they have found? The answer is very simple: **WRONG!** You can't find a fossil of something which didn't exist! What you can do, however, is find fossils, mix fossils, incorrectly identify fossils, incorrectly fill in missing parts of fossils, and, if you're really desperate, you can even tamper with or lie about the existence of fossils. All of these situations have occurred, most of them more than once, in the creation of these so-called “missing links.”

1. THE PROBLEMS WITH PALEONTOLOGY

Before addressing the various “missing link” claims on an individual basis, I would like to call your attention to the overall problems associated with paleontology, especially as they apply to the Evolutionist's Camp. First, when scientists study fossils, there are only certain things they can deduce. For example, from the bones of a Tyrannosaurus Rex, they can tell how tall it was, guess at its weight, and estimate its general shape and size--disallowing any boneless appendages such as the humps on a camel. They cannot, however, tell its skin color or texture, describe its behavior, or know for sure what it ate. The Tyrannosaurus Rex may have been an easily frightened plant eater with the colorful stripes

of a coral snake.

Some scientists believe the Tyrannosaurus Rex may have been a vegetarian, as the roots of its teeth were possibly too short for it to have been a carnivore. The pressure which would have been required to rip the meat off of another animal would, most likely, have pulled its teeth from their sockets. It is also believed that if it had ever tripped and fallen (i.e. chasing prey) its arms were so short that it would not have been able to stop its fall, and would have been killed by the impact. (Appearances can be deceiving. Panda Bears are vegetarians with very sharp teeth. Elephants are large animals with extremely large tusks, but are commonly domesticated.) [19-C] [19-I]

We know for sure that the Tyrannosaurus was a vegetarian before Adam sinned (as there was no death before this) and would have been subject to and fearful of humans later.

Then God said, "Let us make man in our image, in our likeness, and let them rule over the fish of the sea and the birds of the air, over the livestock, over all the earth, and over all the creatures that move along the ground." Genesis 1:26

Then God blessed Noah and his sons, saying to them, "Be fruitful and increase in number and fill the earth. The fear and dread of you will fall upon all the beasts of the earth and all the birds of the air, upon every creature that moves along the ground, and upon all the fish of the sea; they are given into your hands. Everything that lives and moves will be food for you. Genesis 9:1-3

Second, there is often the problem of damaged, crushed, incomplete, and/or mixed-up fossils. Often times fossils are found buried with other fossils in large jumbled heaps rather than in any kind of distinct orderly manner (a result of the flood). Not surprisingly, this has resulted in mistakes. One, which will mean more to the older readers, was the "Brontosaurus." This "species of dinosaur" never existed. In 1879, a paleontologist named Othniel Marsh attached the fossil skull of one dinosaur to the fossil skeleton of another. He inadvertently gave this non-existent species a life of its own and a place of prominence in all dinosaur literature--which it held for approximately 100 years. It was accepted by the media, then by the public, and ultimately became as well known in recent times as any real dinosaur which had ever lived. [20] [26]

Third, and most significantly, there is the problem of extreme bias. A true Evolutionist has decided to live as if there is no God, thus he will fight against the very idea of creation. To admit the universe has been created requires admitting that there is a Creator. To admit there is a Creator requires admitting that there is Someone over us. (Here lies the problem). A wise Creationist, on the other hand, has a personal relationship with the Creator and is equally biased in the opposite direction.

In regard to the Evolutionists' camp, this combination of limited knowledge, damaged, incomplete, and mixed-up fossils, and extreme bias has not only resulted in a continual misinterpretation of the actual data, it has resulted in the creation of a significant amount of imaginary evidence. Like the brontosaurus, many species have been created "in the public eye" which never existed.

Before we begin exploring these various "missing link" claims, there is one more thing which needs to be understood: The Evolutionary paleontologists have not fostered this deception on their own. It takes more than a paleontologist to "create a species" in the mind of the public. It also takes the work of an Evolutionary artist and requires an eagerly receptive and unquestioning scientific community and media. What has traditionally happened regarding the supposed links between apes and humans is this:

Some fossilized bones are found and an Evolutionist excitedly proclaims they are the remains of a "missing link." At this point, it is usually determined what facts and information will be given to the public and what will be withheld. Next, an Evolutionary artist is hired to "create the rest of the story."

In the case of a supposed link between apes and humans, the artist is told to make his rendering of the species more “ape-like” if the fossil is believed to be extremely old, or more “human-like” if it is believed to be more recent. The external features--eyes, ears, nose, lips, and hair--are the characteristics “designed” to give it the more ape-like or more human-like appearance. They are free to do this because these features are not present on skeletons, consequently no one knows how they looked. The appearance of the species, therefore, is almost entirely dependent upon the artist’s ability to create what the paleontologist desires. Next, the Evolutionist gives it a very scientific-sounding name, and then the rest of the Evolutionist community joyfully celebrates the “find.” Finally, the media takes the news and the associated pictures and broadcasts it to the world.

Unfortunately, after enough of these claims had been made, other Evolutionary artists have gone on to create the multitude of charts, pictures, and models which we have all seen depicting each and every step of this imaginary evolutionary progress.

2. SUPPOSED LINKS BETWEEN APES AND MAN.

2-a. Nebraska Man (*Hesperopithecus Haroldcooki*)

An entire “missing link” was created as the result of the excavation of a single tooth. Upon later excavations it was discovered that the tooth had actually come from an extinct pig. The University of Nebraska had an entire model of Nebraska Man on display until this was discovered. [11]

2-b. Piltdown Man (*Eoanthropus Dawsoni*)

A “missing link” was created as the result of a human skull being adjusted to fit an orangutan’s jaw. The teeth were also filed to suit the Evolutionist’s desires. Both human and orangutan were recently dead: They had been stained to cause them to appear ancient. The hoax was discovered by the British Museum after 35 years on display. [8] [11]

*** **The Scopes Monkey Trial:** Nebraska Man and Piltdown Man were two pieces of “evidence” used in the Scopes Monkey Trial (the trial of John Thomas Scopes in 1925). This trial challenged the law which prohibited the teaching of the Theory of Evolution in the state of Tennessee. The nation’s media and the trial lawyers used this “evidence” to make Christians appear foolish because they believed the Biblical account of creation. This particular bit of propaganda has been perpetuated down through the years in the movie and the play called “Inherit the Wind.” In this movie/play, the Christians associated with this event are not only portrayed as if they had been foolish, they are characterized as if they had been extremely unkind (another lie). [2] [11] [28]

2-c. Java Man (*Pithacanthropus Erectus*)

This “missing link” was created when the skull cap of a giant gibbon (ape) and a human leg bone were excavated and said to be part of the same “ape-man.” There were also three teeth included in this mix--

one human and two orangutan. The discoverer--Eugene Du Bois--knew this was nonsense because the skull cap and leg bone were excavated 46 feet away from each other. These "finds" were also separated by a period of approximately one year. In addition to all this, Du Bois hid the fact that he had found two clearly human skulls at the same depth as this supposed evolutionary link, during this same excavation. This proved that humans were living at the same time as this so-called "Java Man;" therefore, it could not have been their evolutionary ancestor. (When the two human skulls were ultimately released, they were named the "Wajak" skulls.) [8] [11]

2-d. Peking Man (One named "Nellie," Classified as *Sinanthropus Pekinensis* in 1927 and *Homo Erectus* in 1940).

This "missing link" was created as the result of widely scattered skull fragments--which were actually from monkeys--being put together with the aid of lots of filler. An artist was then used to model the face of an "evolving woman." The body was all imagination. In addition to the fact that none of this was made known to the public, the following information was also withheld. In this same excavation site, there was evidence of limestone mining, fires being built, and humans evidently eating the brains of these monkeys. There were skulls only, with no bodies, and each of the skulls had been broken into in a similar fashion--evidently to allow the brains to be removed. In other words, Nellie was the remains of a miner's lunch. [8] [11] It's also important to note that all of the supposed evidence for Peking Man mysteriously disappeared between 1941 and 1945 [11], and that one of the people who was involved in this so-called "find" was also involved in the Piltdown Man hoax--a man named Teilhard De Chardin. [25] All that remains are "casts" of unproven accuracy and two teeth.

2-e. Lucy (*Australopithecus*)

This "missing link" was created when the fossil remains of one species of ape were put with the knee joint of another species. The knee joint was found more than one mile away and approximately 200 feet deeper than the rest of the remains. Evolutionists claimed this was an "upright ape" (an ape-like creature which had evolved to the point where it walked on two legs like a man) because of the hip and knee joint. In addition to the excavation locations disproving this claim, a computer analysis also showed that these parts could not have come from a creature able to walk upright. The measurements of the jaws and teeth indicate the skull was simply that of an extinct ape. (In the rain forest there is a pigmy chimp which walks upright, but it's still a chimp.) [2] [8] [11]

2-f. Cro-Magnon Man

This "missing link" was created from remains which are no different than those of people living today. The remains show an equal physique and brain capacity to the people you will see in the grocery store today. [14]

2-g. Neanderthal Man

Neanderthal Man was simply a human being with a slightly larger brain capacity than is normal today. He was said to have been a “missing link” because he was evidently unable to stand up straight. Science, however, has shown he was simply an old man who suffered from arthritis. Remains of several more of these people have since been found in the Neanderthal valley in Germany, and the bones of three of them revealed that they were stooped over. Scientists have examined these remains and determined that they suffered from rickets, arthritis, syphilis, or some type of vitamin D deficiency. Evidence also shows that these people sewed, cooked on fires (sometimes using stone plates), put flowers on the graves of the deceased, and had a form of writing. [2] [8] [11] [14] [19N]

2-h. Ramapithecus

This “missing link” was created from a single jaw and some teeth. Scientists have now found approximately 40 more of these creatures; they are very closely related to the orangutan. [11]

2-i. Homo Habilis

This was simply an ape (another australopithecine) similar to an orangutan or small chimpanzee. [11]

2-j. Boxgrove Man

This “missing link” was created (mostly by the media) from a single piece of a shin bone. Newspapers in England reported that Boxgrove Man was an intermediate link between apes and humans who was not evolved enough to speak. They also reported that he was too primitive to wear clothes or to use tools, spears, bows and arrows, or fire. [29]

2-k. Atheidemic Evolva Limitus (Atheistic Scientist)

This species, found living at various times throughout history, was originally thought to have been an evolutionary link between ape and man. This belief was based upon the fact that it has a physique identical to that of “modern man,” combined with a severely limited mental capacity. This mental limitation is evidenced by their denial of the existence of God and their belief that they are distantly related to oatmeal. Further studies, however, have concluded that this species is fully human. Its mental limitations are simply the result of refusing to show any fear or reverence to the Creator of the universe. [17]

3. SUPPOSED LINKS BETWEEN OTHER SPECIES.

Almost all of the supposed in-between species fossils Evolutionists claim to have found are of ape-like creatures which were supposedly in the process of evolving into humans. There are, however, a few others (and I emphasize “a few”) which need to be addressed. Remember again, if the Theory of Evolution were true, there would not be just a few links found, there would be hundreds of thousands of them.

3-a. Archaeopteryx

This is an extinct bird found only in the fossil record. It was claimed to have been an evolutionary link between reptiles and birds because it had claws on its wings and teeth in its beak. Neither of these characteristics, however, supports Evolution, as there are birds living today which have claws on their wings (the ostrich, toucan, and hoatzin), and there are some reptiles which have teeth (the rattlesnake) and some which don't (most lizards). If Evolution were true, notice also the problem which would exist in regard to the evolutionary relationship between the rattlesnake and the lizard. The legs of the lizard would indicate that it had evolved upward from the snake, yet the snake's teeth would indicate that it had evolved upward from the lizard. Another unanswerable question in regard to the archaeopteryx, is if this species were evolving from reptile to bird, how had its wings, feathers, bones, muscles for flight, etc. completely evolved into bird while its claws and teeth had remained totally reptilian? (It was most likely a very strong flyer as it had an extremely robust furcula--the bone where the muscles attach for the power stroke in flight.) Finally, a bit of information conveniently ignored in Evolutionist circles is the fact that the fossils of “fully developed” birds have been found in sedimentary levels below the one in which the Archaeopteryx was found. [10] [11]

3-b. The Dawn Horse (Hyracotherium)

This was the fossil of an animal with several toes, said to have been a small evolutionary ancestor of the horse. Later research determined, however, that it was simply the fossil of a rock badger (also known as a “coney”). Note, even if this claim had not been disproved, there would still be other problems with it: (1) A small horse would not prove the Evolution theory as there are both large horses (Clydesdales and Belgians) and miniature horses today. (2) Some Shire horses have been known to have more than one toe per foot. (3) All of the supposed evolutionary ancestors of the horse are found in the same geological formations, confirming they all lived at the same time. [10] [11]

3-c. The Downy Dinosaur

A dinosaur fossil with long parallel arrays of fibers about its skin was discovered in China. Scientists believe these arrays were simply frayed collagen fibers beneath the skin. Evolutionists claimed that these fibers were the traces of feathers (although they had no branching patterns as all feathers do) and this species was, therefore, an evolutionary link between reptiles and birds. [15A] [19A] [19F] Evolutionists have yet to explain how skin could evolve feathers, or how heavy dinosaur bones could evolve into the bones of flying birds, which are hollow, structural engineering masterpieces making

them light enough to fly.

3-d. Whales with Legs

Another claim by Evolutionists is that the whale--a mammal which lives in the ocean and breathes air--evolved from a land animal with legs. There is much disagreement over what this ancestral animal was. Some Evolutionists claim it was some kind of cow; others say it was some kind of wolf; still others say it was some kind of bear. In seeking to support this ridiculous absurdity, Evolutionists have fabricated the following evidence: [28] [29]

Pakicetus = the fossilized jaw and portions of the skull of an unidentified animal were found and Evolutionists claimed that it was a “walking whale.” (There were no body parts found.) [19H]

Basilosaurus = the fossilized skeleton of an aquatic animal--with functional hind limbs--was found and subsequently claimed to be an evolutionary link from land animal to whale. Its hind limbs, however, were far too small to have had anything to do with walking. They were most likely used for grasping during mating. [19H]

Ambulocetus = the fossil of an unidentified animal was found--which definitely had hind limbs--and was claimed to be an evolutionary link between land animal and whale. While this animal was most likely able to walk, it had no relation to whales. (This would be like finding the fossil of a dog and claiming that it proves mice evolved into horses.) [19H]

3-e. Other in-between species (Evolution by artists' selection)

There have been many artists' renderings of imaginary links between different species of organisms which are based entirely upon what Evolutionists say “should have existed” (i.e., they do not even have the support of misinterpreted physical evidence). A few examples are: (1) dinosaurs turning into giraffes or ostriches, (2) various stages of the imaginary evolution of the horse (from the so-called “Dawn Horse” discussed previously),” and (3) various stages of the imaginary evolution of the elephant. Evolutionary artists have apparently decided that the elephant looks similar to a tapir and have, thus, “created” (by pen and ink) intermediate stages between the two.

Be forewarned, now that the majority of this country is utterly rebelling against God, the amount of so-called “evidence” offered in support of Evolution will probably increase greatly. Evolutionists seem to be growing less and less concerned about making bold capricious claims regarding this “evidence.” It seems that much of the “scientific” community has ceased questioning its own members.

D. DESPERATE MANEUVERS ON THE PART OF THE EVOLUTIONISTS

From the above information, you can see why “missing links” are called “missing:” They don’t exist! Faced with this complete lack of evidence, Evolutionists have found themselves in a rather precarious situation. In desperation, they have pulled a couple of interesting maneuvers worthy of mention. (Darwin might be surprised by these maneuvers as he once said: “Those who believe that the geological record is in any degree complete, will undoubtedly at once reject my theory.”) [27]

1. Molecular Taxonomy / Chromosome Banding

Desperate maneuver number one is something called “Molecular Taxonomy,” or “Chromosome Banding.” Because some of the blood proteins in humans and chimpanzees are similar, Evolutionists claim this is evidence proving we evolved from the same creature. (There are also many differences which they conveniently ignore.) Chromosome numbers, however, which should be related to Evolution if anything is, show absolutely no evidence of it. If Evolution were true, then the chromosome numbers should line up in the same order as the evolution of the species. In other words, if a species changed from fish to amphibian to reptile to mammal to human, the chromosome numbers would show it. They do not! [8] [12]

*** Here are the chromosome numbers for a few different species of life-forms:

Fruit Fly -8
Tasmanian Devil & Aloe Vera – 14
Starfish, Red Panda, Earthworm – 36
European Rabbit, Moon Jellyfish, Dolphin, Coffee – 44
Human, Shrimp (*Parhyale hawaiensis*) – 46
Apes, Tobacco – 48
Zebrafish, Skunk, Pineapple – 50
Silkworm, Strawberry, Elephant – 56
[69]

Definition—A chromosome is one of a set of threadlike structures composed of DNA and a protein. It forms in the nucleus of a cell when the cell begins to divide and carries the genes which determine an organism’s inherited traits.

2. Punctuated Equilibrium / Hopeful Monsters

Desperate maneuver number two is yet another theory which explains why Evolution Theory doesn’t explain the evidence — why there have been no evolutionary links found in the fossil record when there should have been hundreds of thousands of them. In this case, the theory has been given the very scientific sounding name “Punctuated Equilibrium.” This theory suggests that Evolution happened too fast to have been captured in the fossil record. It suggests that at various times in the past, through various extreme genetic accidents, life forms reproduced completely different species. In other words, a reptile gave birth to a chicken. These theoretical “new species organisms” are sometimes

referred to as “hopeful monsters.” [27]

3. Punctuated Equilibrium combined with Molecular Taxonomy

I will admit that if the Theory of Punctuated Equilibrium was true, if these “hopeful monsters” had actually existed, then the chromosome numbers above might not be a problem. It is important to note, however, that if this is the case, then humans are closely related to shrimp, and both of us came from tobacco.

Chromosome Numbers

Tobacco - 48

Human – 46

Shrimp (*Parhyale hawaiensis*) – 46

Chapter B-7

IF THE THEORY OF EVOLUTION IS SO OBVIOUSLY FALSE, THEN WHY DOES THE WORLD BELIEVE IT & WHY IS THIS BATTLE RAGING?

Needless to say, there are many people who believe the Theory of Evolution simply because they have been lied to—over and over again. This theory is conveyed as fact by so many sources

The Theory of Evolution is presented as if it were fact by great numbers of schools and universities, books, encyclopedias, magazines, radio and television programs, movies, museums, national parks, etc.

that many people don't even know it's debated. On those rare occasions when it is admitted that it is only theory, the discussions are usually so biased and the evidence so misleading that an uninformed person would feel foolish for doubting it.

In the 1994 Worldbook Encyclopedia, under the subject of "Evolution," the authors admit that Evolution is only a theory, yet go on to say: "When a theory is supported by so much evidence, it becomes accepted as scientific fact. Almost all scientists consider the Theory of Evolution to be a scientific fact." Various aspects of evolution are then presented as if they were fact under all related subjects: prehistoric people, prehistoric animals, human beings, fish, horses, dinosaurs, fossils, coal, the earth, the solar system, etc.

The question, therefore, we need to ask is, "Why are people telling this lie?" Why are so many people involved in pushing this ridiculous and ungodly fantasy?

There are actually three answers to this question, three categories of people who are helping to spread it and keep it alive. First, there are the people who are totally deceived themselves and are simply propagating the lie they have believed. Unfortunately, a lot of these people are in very influential positions, such as school teachers, textbook writers, museum curators, etc., resulting in the proverbial problem of "the blind leading the blind."

Second, there are the people who, even though they know Evolution is illogical, unscientific, and without evidential support, are unwilling to stand against it. Many in this group, many scientists and science teachers in particular, are knowingly helping to propagate this lie. They do it for the promise of financial gain, for the fear of financial loss, or because of peer pressure.

Many research grants are awarded to people searching for evidence of Evolution. [18] Many secular universities will not accept a Creationist into their natural sciences programs and will often remove one if discovered. [18] Most public school and university teachers are reluctant to / or restricted from mentioning creation because of the fear of being sued--by such legal organizations as the Atheist and Communists Lawyers United--because of the so-called "separation of church and state." (Sadly, it is now illegal to teach the facts because they agree with the Bible.)

Before continuing, it is important to understand that not all scientists who espouse Evolution fall into this category. There are probably a lot of very good ones who simply fail to question the obvious flaws in this theory. [I personally would have doubted a scientist could do this, except for the fact that much of the scientific data in this book has come from former Evolutionists.]

The final group of people who are pushing this ungodly fantasy are the ones who know the truth, who understand the implications as well as the ramifications of this theory, and who are in absolute rebellion against God. They are the ones who want Evolution taught as fact throughout society, and who want the Bible and the Ten Commandments out.

For the time will come when men will not put up with sound doctrine. Instead, to suit their own desires, they will gather around them a great number of teachers to say what their itching ears want to hear. They will turn their ears away from the truth and turn aside to myths. 2 Timothy 4:3,4

Humanly speaking, they are the evil force behind this theory, willfully pushing it at all levels of society. They also actively seek to muffle any opposition.

When a Creation Science article is accepted for publication in secular circles--which is a rare occurrence--it will almost always have been written by someone who is not an expert on the particular subject which they have chosen to write about. Evolutionists allow this meager representation of truth so that people will believe they are unbiased. [18]

If we as Christians are surprised by this, we shouldn't be. God clearly tells us to expect it. You see, **this is the third battle front--"the war against the world."** Earlier in this book you read about the conflict Christians face as we seek to serve and live for God. There is the war against the flesh (our battle against our own sinful desires), the war against the devil (our battle against Satan and his hordes), and the war against the world (the fact that much of the world's population absolutely hates our Father).

If the world hates you, keep in mind it hated me first. If you belonged to the world, it would love you as its own. As it is, you do not belong to the world, but I have chosen you out of the world. That is why the world hates you. John 15:18,19

The Theory of Evolution is the most visible manifestation of this third conflict. It is possibly the most wide spread, well organized, and coordinated revolt against the Kingdom of God that mankind has mounted since the Tower of Babel. It works itself out through the sciences (including psychology),

Some branches of psychology (i.e. from people such as Sigmund Freud and Carl Jung) are based greatly upon the lie of Evolution. Building upon Ernst Haeckel's Recapitulation Theory and the claim that humans inherit characteristics from our "non-human ancestors" (Lamarckianism), these men developed theories to explain why "modern humans" behave the way we do. (If we act like animals, it's because our ancestors were.) Even though Recapitulation and Lamarckianism have been disproved, Freudian Psychology and Jungism are still alive and well today. [19N]

government, education, economics, social policy, peer pressure, the media, and is international in scope. (I guess this just proves the old adage: "Nothing brings people together like a common enemy.") At times, it is also used as an assault upon the study of history. Evolutionists do not want to be reminded of the godly origins of a nation or to be faced with what has happened in the past when people have chosen to reject God. (Evolutionists claim that since we are evolving, we are different from our predecessors, and the study of history is, therefore, irrelevant.)

For Christians, our conflict arises as we seek to fulfill the great commission: telling the world about God and His offer of salvation.

He said to them, "Go into all the world and preach the good news to all creation. Whoever believes and

is baptized will be saved, but whoever does not believe will be condemned.” Mark 16:15,16

While we are running around trying to convince people how wonderful He is, the proponents of Evolution are telling them He doesn't exist. Naturally, we meet on the battlefield of life. What we must always remember, though, is the true nature of this battle: **Satan is the enemy; the evolutionists are not!**

*For our struggle is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers, against the authorities, against the powers of this dark world and against the spiritual forces of evil in the heavenly realms.
Ephesians 6:12*

Evolutionists have been taken captive by Satan and he is using them to do his will. We are to seek and pray for their salvation, just as we would for anyone else.

And the Lord's servant must not quarrel; instead, he must be kind to everyone, able to teach, not resentful. Those who oppose him he must gently instruct, in the hope that God will grant them repentance leading them to a knowledge of the truth, and that they will come to their senses and escape from the trap of the devil, who has taken them captive to do his will. 2 Timothy 2:24-26

Chapter B-8

WHAT ARE THE GOALS OF THIS INFORMATION?

In the preceding seven chapters, you have seen the Theory of Evolution explained, explored, exposed, and ruthlessly expelled--biblically, morally, logically, and scientifically. If you have read the first part of this book--about God, life, etc.--then you understand why it was done in this way—my passion for God and for people, and my desire to destroy anything which stands between them. With this in mind, here are the specific objectives which have hopefully been accomplished with this information. I pray that through it you have been greatly blessed and will, in turn, be a vessel through which God can bless other people.

Goal #1.

Goal number one has been to show that the Bible and Theory of Evolution are mutually exclusive. Once the two teachings are thoroughly understood, it is plain to see that if one is true, then the other is false.

Goal #2.

Goal number two has been to call your attention to the immeasurably vast amount of evidence which God has given us proving His existence. I have often heard people say that no one can prove the existence of God. We don't need to. He has done it Himself! If we have a painting, it proves the existence of a painter. If we have a building, it proves the existence of a builder. If we have creation, it proves the existence of a Creator. If we know right from wrong (and every person knows that murder is wrong) it proves the Creator is both moral and compassionate.

For since the creation of the world God's invisible qualities—his eternal power and divine nature— have been clearly seen, being understood from what has been made, so that men are without excuse. Romans 1:20

The heavens declare the glory of God; the skies proclaim the work of his hands. Day after day they pour forth speech; night after night they display knowledge. There is no speech or language where their voice is not heard. Their voice goes out into all the earth, their words to the ends of the world. Psalm 19:1-4

Indeed, when Gentiles, who do not have the law, do by nature things required by the law, they are a law for themselves, even though they do not have the law, since they show that the requirements of the law are written on their hearts, their consciences also bearing witness, and their thoughts now accusing, now

even defending them. Romans 2:14,15

Goal #3.

Goal number three has been to show that the facts--scientific, geological, archaeological, astronomical, historical, and social--when ultimately learned, understood, and truthfully reported always agree with the Bible. The Bible is true! The Bible is accurate! **The Bible is the Word of God!**

All scripture is God-breathed and is useful for teaching, rebuking, correcting and training in righteousness, . . . 2 Timothy 3:16

For the word of the LORD is right and true; . . . Psalm 33:4

Goal #4.

Goal number four has been to show that any claim, theory, or suggestion which disagrees with the Bible is not only wrong, it is potentially very dangerous and possibly very evil.

Timothy, guard what has been entrusted to your care. Turn away from godless chatter and the opposing ideas of what is falsely called knowledge, which some have professed and in so doing have wandered from the faith. 1 Timothy 6:20

Goal #5.

Goal number five has been to expose the extremely serious and eternally dangerous war going on all around us between sinful men and a Holy God and show that the Theory of Evolution is a major part of it. We need to understand this so we are not surprised by the conflict,

In fact, everyone who wants to live a godly life in Christ Jesus will be persecuted, while evil men and impostors will go from bad to worse, deceiving and being deceived. 2 Timothy 3:12-13

misled by the crowd,

For the time will come when men will not put up with sound doctrine. Instead, to suit their own desires, they will gather around them a great number of teachers to say what their itching ears want to hear. They will turn their ears away from the truth and turn aside to myths. 2 Timothy 4:3,4

nor overcome by the lies. (Approximately two-thirds of the children in the United States who start out believing in creation {i.e. truth} reject it by the time they complete a secular education.) [4]

. . . my people are destroyed from lack of knowledge. Hosea 4:6

There are actually two major battle fronts in this Mankind vs. God war, the second being the world's religions. Every religion in the world, except Christianity, says that we can "achieve" heaven by our own abilities. We can either learn enough, work hard enough,

For it is by grace you have been saved, through faith—and this not from yourselves, it is the gift of God—not by works, so that no one can boast. Ephesians 2:8,9

be good enough,

There is a way that seems right to a man, but in the end it leads to death. Proverbs 14:12

serve others enough,

*All of us have become like one who is unclean, and all our righteous acts are like filthy rags; . . .
Isaiah 64:6*

or do something enough to achieve salvation by our own power. Only the Bible tells us that we absolutely cannot. It tells us that we have all missed the minimum requirement of sinless perfection,

. . . for all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God, . . . Romans 3:23

and the only way that any of us is going to get to heaven is by accepting what Almighty God has done for us. It is the Creator's work, not ours!

*For Christ died for sins once for all, the righteous for the unrighteous, to bring you to God.
1 Peter 3:18*

Just as the Theory of Evolution exalts man by saying "there is no God above us," so mankind's religions do it by saying "we don't need God above us." In reality, there are some amazing similarities between the Theory of Evolution and some of the world's most prominent false religions (which you will read about in goal # 9, point "a"). You see, it is not only possible for the majority of the world's population to be wrong, they are wrong!

Enter through the narrow gate. For wide is the gate and broad is the road that leads to destruction, and many enter through it. But small is the gate and narrow is the road that leads to life, and only a few find it. Matthew 7:13,14

Goal #6.

Goal number six has been to show how utterly awesome, how utterly magnificent, how utterly beyond description our Almighty Creator is, and to inspire you to humble yourself before Him. Think about it: Each and every one of the 30 trillion cells inside each and every one of the 7.73 billion distinctively different people on earth is as complex as the greatest city which man has ever built. And people are only one of the life forms on earth. And there's the earth itself, with all of its resources, all of its systems, and all of its precision, providing all the necessities of life. And there are the stars--a hundred billion, billion of them, strewn throughout almost infinite space, all held in place by nothing other than (or should we say "nothing less than") the incredible power of God. And He brought all of creation into existence, sustains it, and keeps it all running by a simple act of His will—by simply deciding that it should be.

By faith we understand that the universe was formed at God's command, so that what is seen was not made out of what was visible. Hebrews 11:3

The Son is the radiance of God's glory and the exact representation of his being, sustaining all things by his powerful word. Hebrews 1:3

And this God, this incredibly magnificent Being, is as righteous and as holy and as just as He is powerful. And it is because this unshakable cosmic reality collides violently and inevitably with the very nature of man that the human race is in incredible peril. Every one of us has come into this world with a sinful, rebellious "I want to be my own god" attitude. Now, we conceited, rebellious little

created beings stand utterly guilty, exposed, and defenseless before the sovereign Creator of the universe, who absolutely must punish all unrighteousness. To allow injustice to go unpunished requires injustice.

Thankfully however, blessedly however, this magnificent Creator God is as loving and as caring and as merciful as He is just. And it is this incredible earth shaking impasse--justice's unyielding demand that sin be punished and God's infinite desire to forgive us and make us His children--that put Him to death on the cross.

And when Jesus had cried again out in a loud voice, he gave up his spirit. At that moment the curtain of the temple was torn in two from top to bottom. The earth shook and the rocks split. The tombs broke open and the bodies of many holy people who had died were raised to life. Matthew 27:50-52

Laws have been broken, sentence has been passed, and Almighty God stepped into our world to take our punishment for us. Jesus Christ--creator of heaven and earth--actually stepped into human flesh to be insulted, spit upon, punched in the face, shredded with a whip, and to be physically nailed to a cross where He hung until He died to pay for our unrighteousness.

In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was with God in the beginning. Through him all things were made; without him nothing was made that has been made. . . He was in the world, and though the world was made through him, the world did not recognize him. . . The Word became flesh and made his dwelling among us. John 1:1-3,10,14

He did this because of the evil things I would do. He did this because of the evil things you would do. And now He calls us. He calls us to humility and to repentance and to become His eternal children in heaven. The one and only alternative is paying for our own sins in the never ending fires of hell. Personally, I say "yes!" **I scream "yes!"** I accept Him, I love Him, I praise Him, and I will joyfully spend all of eternity bowing before Him. I bow to His love, His mercy, His power, to everything about Him. Anyone who refuses to do so is as foolish as God is powerful.

Goal #7.

At this point, I would like to take advantage of this subject of Evolution to address again one of life's most difficult questions. **How can God justly send a person to hell who never heard that He died for their sins?** (This question was addressed in the chapter "What about the people who have never had the Bible?") Equipped now with a true understanding of the Theory of Evolution, that in essence, it is mankind's desire to extinguish God, we can more adequately answer this question. Think for a moment: What would be the response of a true Evolutionist (an atheist) to the message of the cross--to God's offer of salvation? He would, of course, reject it. No one is going to accept an offer from God who refuses to acknowledge the existence of God. The Lord, therefore, being omniscient--knowing everything that is or ever will be in a person's heart--is not justly required to have the message presented. If someone rejects the general message which we have through creation--that God exists and is a moral being--justness does not require that God give him a more specific message. (In theological circles, these messages from God are referred to as "general" and "specific" revelation.)

The heavens declare the glory of God; the skies proclaim the work of his hands. Day after day they pour forth speech; night after night they display knowledge. There is no speech or language where their voice is not heard. Their voice goes out into all the earth, their words to the ends of the world. Psalm 19:1-4

Anyone who is receptive to God's general message will be given specific revelation, even if it requires

supernatural means. Do not forget that God can speak to people directly,

For God does speak— now one way, now another—though man may not perceive it. In a dream, in a vision of the night, when deep sleep falls on men as they slumber in their beds, He may speak in their ears and terrify them with warnings, to turn man from wrongdoing and keep him from pride, to preserve his soul from the pit, . . . Job 33:14-18

has angels at His command (although the only Biblical record of an angel presenting the gospel is still in the future),

A holy angel told him to have you come to his house so that he could hear what you have to say. Acts 10:22

and can supernaturally move someone to present it, if needed.

When they came up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord suddenly took Philip away, and the eunuch did not see him again, but went on his way rejoicing. Acts 8:39

I am the good shepherd; I know my sheep and my sheep know me— just as the Father knows me and I know the Father—and I lay down my life for the sheep. I have other sheep that are not of this sheep pen. I must bring them also. They too will listen to my voice, and there shall be one flock and one shepherd. John 10:14-16

If not knowing how salvation could be offered to people in remote areas has been your excuse for not accepting it, ignorance is no longer an excuse to go to hell. [Do not use this as an excuse to avoid telling someone about salvation. It is our God-given responsibility!]

Goal #8.

Goal number eight has been to show the utter foolishness which results from rejecting God. Whether individually or as a nation, when people decide to live as if there is no God, the foolishness soars to incredible heights. It's amazing to think of the time, energy, and resources spent by people trying to convince themselves and/or others that God doesn't exist, when the evidence is everywhere and the evidence is everything. It is before our eyes and it is our eyes themselves. (I don't think an Evolutionist would ever suggest that a super-computer could come into existence by accident, but beings smart enough to make and program super-computers supposedly did.)

A particularly obvious point of foolishness is found in the contents of two adjoining articles in the encyclopedia - the 'human body' and 'human being.' In one, the authors seek to explain much of what science has learned about the incredible micro and macro-complexity of the human body, and in the other, they suggest that all this complexity happened by chance.

For although they knew God, they neither glorified him as God nor gave thanks to him, but their thinking became futile and their foolish hearts were darkened. Although they claimed to be wise, they became fools . . . Romans 1:21-22

Goal #9.

Goal number nine has been to arm you with all of this knowledge, thus enabling you to become part of the solution instead of part of the problem.

Always be prepared to give an answer to everyone who asks you to give the reason for the hope that you have. 1 Peter 3:15

There are a lot of very wonderful and godly people, even some very good Bible teachers, who, because they are deceived themselves, not only fail to rebuke this lie, they ignorantly give it credence. I have even heard of a Bible which includes commentaries which basically support the Theory of Evolution and suggest that “perhaps the creation account in Genesis is not meant to be taken literally.” [29] (Children go to church and are taught that God created the universe. They go to school and are taught that “evolution” did it. When questioning the disparity, the school says the church is wrong, and the church says we’re not sure.)

Have nothing to do with godless myths and old wives’ tales; rather, train yourself to be godly. 1 Timothy 4:7

We must always be aware, however, that not everyone who claims to be a Christian and supports the Theory of Evolution is either ignorant or innocent. It is certainly not a rare strategy for Satan to work from inside the church, achieving his goals through evil people masquerading as Christians.

And no wonder, for Satan himself masquerades as an angel of light. It is not surprising, then, if his servants masquerade as servants of righteousness. 2 Corinthians 11:14-15

When Darwin first introduced his version of the Theory of Evolution, most of the scientific community rejected it. It was the liberal theologians of his day that kept it alive. The church was so infiltrated that Darwin (a theologian himself) even had the honor of being buried in Westminster Abbey—the most famous church building in England. [29]

In an effort to more completely achieve this goal--equipping you to become a part of the solution--here is some final information. This material is intended to further define and clarify this battle, arm you with a few more truths of which you may not be aware, further reprogram your thinking from an Evolutionist’s to a Biblical perspective, and give you an even greater awareness of the many subtle indoctrinations of this theory.

9-a. The Theory of Evolution is a Religion.

While the Theory of Evolution is definitely not science, it is religion. When we look past all the pseudo-scientific hype, we discover that the basic underlying claim of this theory is identical to that espoused by Hinduism, Taoism, Buddhism, and the “New Age Movement” (which is simply a blending of the other three). According to Evolution, “there is no personal Creator; natural phenomena created life and natural selection guides its progress.” According to these other false religions, “there is no personal Creator; ‘Nature’ created life and ‘Nature’ guides all life processes.” (In addition, all five of these belief systems either credit nature with creating the non-living parts of the universe or they simply ignore the subject.) The only true difference is in terminology. Evolution says “there is no God” (atheism), while these false religions say “nature and everything else is God” (pantheism). In reality, what’s the difference? If we remove the idea of a personal transcendent Creator, does it make any difference what we call the rest?

It is important to understand that Satan and his demonic cohorts are not uninvolved in all of this.

The Spirit clearly says that in later times some will abandon the faith and follow deceiving spirits and things taught by demons. Such teachings come through hypocritical liars, whose consciences have been seared as with a hot iron. 1 Timothy 4:1,2

This lie, “We can be our own gods” (more clearly stated in pantheism than in atheism) is the same temptation Satan used on Eve in the Garden of Eden. In pantheism, where we and everything else are boldly said to be “god,” the theoretical force in nature which supposedly “creates and guides all things” is said to have both a positive and negative side. (These opposites are also referred to as “light and dark,” “yin and yang,” and “male and female.”) Followers of these pantheistic belief systems are told (very esoterically) that by coming to a true understanding of our “divine nature” and of the “true essence of good and evil,” they will naturally move toward the “positive” or “light” side. (They claim that sin doesn’t exist; good and evil are seemingly contradictory parts of the same amoral reality.) By moving far enough toward the “light” side, they will achieve their “full divine potential.” In other words, “they will be like God, knowing good and evil.”

For God knows that when you eat of it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil. Genesis 3:5

9-b. Life in the Beginning: Let’s do some reprogramming.

The first humans to exist were highly intelligent, spoke well, and had both technical knowledge and ability. Adam and Eve sewed and gardened and Adam named all the animals. They also ruled over all the animals, including the dinosaurs. Cain, their first born son, built a city and raised livestock. No later than seven generations after Adam, people were playing harps and flutes and engaged in metal-forging to make tools. (Noah probably used hand tools which would rival anything you can get at the hardware store today.)

Sewed (*Genesis 3:7*) / Gardened (*Genesis 2:15*) / Named the animals (*Genesis 2:20*) / Ruled over the dinosaurs (*Genesis 1:26*) / Built a city (*Genesis 4:17*) / Raised livestock (*Genesis 4:2*) / Harps and flutes (*Genesis 4:21*) / Metal forging of tools (*Genesis 4:22*)

Thinking of these or any other people as ‘primitive’ is the result of Evolutionary brainwashing. ‘Primitive’--defined as “the earliest kind in existence”--does not apply to human beings or to any other type of life form. There is and always has been only one kind of human being--just like us, made in the image of God.

Understanding this, we are not surprised by ancient technological achievements, such as the pyramids or Stonehenge, or many others the Evolutionists don’t want you to know about--like 2,000 year-old electric batteries,

Many 2,000 year old electric batteries have been found in Parthian settlements near Baghdad. These batteries consist of a pottery jar with an opening at the top. Inside the opening, and held in place with asphalt, is a tube made of a copper sheet. This tube is sealed at the bottom with a copper disc held in place with more asphalt. Suspended from the asphalt lid is an iron rod which hangs down inside the center of the copper roll. A functioning battery would have been able to produce an electric current of approximately 1.5 volts when an acid (like vinegar) was added. Hooking multiple batteries together in sequence would most likely have produced a higher voltage. These batteries may have been used for electro plating and/or for medical treatment. Electric fish were used for medicinal purposes in Greek and Roman times, for relieving headache and gout. [19A] [32],

4,500 year-old electro-plated items [32], 2,100 year-old printed fabric (i.e. done on a printing press)

[32], 3,500 year-old evaporative cooling (which honey bees also use) [39], 1,600 year-old stainless steel [19A], 2,300 year-old human-carrying-kites from china (i.e. hang-gliders) [19J], glass lenses and aerodynamic wooden bird models from ancient Egypt [32], and ancient travel which enabled people to visit the American continent 2,000 years before Columbus [32]. We may have some knowledge which the people in the past did not have, but we are certainly no more intelligent. There is actually a good chance that we are less intelligent, as we are suffering from the accumulation of 6,000 years of the curse of Adam's sin—6,000 years since the beginning of entropy and of the decline of genetic codes. People in the past actually accomplished technological feats--like transporting enormously heavy stones--which we are unable to duplicate today. [32] The Bible tells us that knowledge and abilities are learned, lost, and rediscovered, and that there really isn't anything new under the sun.

What has been will be again, what has been done will be done again; there is nothing new under the sun. Is there anything of which one can say, "Look! This is something new"? It was here already, long ago; it was here before our time. Ecclesiastes 1:9,10

“Well,” someone may ask, “what about all the so-called primitive people in the world today?” Unfortunately, “decadent” is the word which we would have to use to describe these people. You see, all technologically deficient cultures have descended from technologically advanced ones, because of sin. Again, the first human ever born built a city. Sadly, what has happened is that there have been various cultures over time, which have chosen to unitedly reject God. As a result, these people and the generations which followed were not only left without any true or sustainable basis of morality, they were disconnected from the very source of all knowledge and wisdom.

The fear of the LORD is the beginning of wisdom, and knowledge of the Holy One is understanding. Proverbs 9:10

The fear of the LORD is the beginning of knowledge, but fools despise wisdom and discipline. Proverbs 1:7

Naturally, their cultures began to deteriorate and the results are what we see today. (Consider the growing tide of illiteracy in this country, now that we are nationally rejecting God.)

A 1994 Department of Education Study revealed that less than half of U.S. college graduates could read a bus schedule or figure out how much change they should get back when laying down \$3.00 for a 60 cent bowl of soup and a \$1.95 sandwich. /// In 1998, the Third International Mathematics and Science Study revealed that U.S. high school seniors rank below the seniors of almost all other industrialized countries in math and science literacy. U.S. public schools are the best funded on earth. [37A]

A couple of sad, yet relevant examples of this decadence of cultures are the Catchua and the Lockendone Indians of South America. The Catchuas are a totally unmotivated group of people (many of whom are addicted to cocaine, staying on it constantly) perfectly content to spend their entire lives as the servants of others. This very depressed and aimless culture descended from the Incas. The Incas were a technologically advanced society which had accomplished brain surgery, built an impressive network of roads (including one which was 3,250 miles long), had impressive architecture (some roof tops adorned with gold) and built an irrigation system which is still intact today (almost 500 years later). They were also satanic—worshipping idols, building torture chambers, and engaging in human sacrifice. [23K] [31]

Do I mean then that a sacrifice offered to an idol is anything, or that an idol is anything? No, but the sacrifices of pagans are offered to demons, not to God, and I do not want you to be participants with demons. 1 Corinthians 10:19-20

The Lockendones are also a group of people who live an extremely deprived existence. (In Evolutionist's terms, they have been described as “one of the most primitive peoples alive today.”) The

Lockendones are descendants of the Mayans. The Mayans were a very technologically advanced society, showing themselves to be highly skilled at architecture, mathematics, and astronomy. They accurately measured a solar year at 365.2420 days, while modern astronomers have just recently measured it at 365.2422 days. They also correctly predicted solar eclipses on a 23-year rotation. Sadly, like the Incas, the Mayans also grew very evil. They engaged in human sacrifice (their artwork shows them offering the hearts of their victims to idols) and were known to have slaughtered people by the tens of thousands. [23L] [31]

God used Spain to conquer both of these nations (the Incas and the Mayans), allowing them to defeat the Incas with a force of only 167 men. [23K]

For the nation or kingdom that will not serve you will perish; it will be utterly ruined. Isaiah 60:12

I am the LORD your God, . . . You shall have no other gods before me. You shall not make for yourself an idol in the form of anything in heaven above or on the earth beneath or in the waters below. You shall not bow down to them or worship them; for I, the LORD your God, am a jealous God, punishing the children for the sin of the fathers to the third and fourth generation of those who hate me, but showing love to a thousand generations of those who love me and keep my commandments. Exodus 20:2-6

[This does not cast any judgment on the morality of Spain at this time. They could have been very good or very evil. God uses anybody He wants to, any time He wants to, any way He wants to.]

I will bring the most wicked of the nations to take possession of their houses; I will put an end to the pride of the mighty, and their sanctuaries will be desecrated. Ezekiel 7:24

9-c. More Evolutionist Concepts: Have You Been Indoctrinated?

It is doubtful that any of us has been totally immune to the subtle deception of the Theory of Evolution, as it has become so pervasive in our society. Even if we have never accepted the theory, we have, most likely, believed different aspects of it. I have included below, a list of concepts which are either entirely the result of Evolutionary thinking or are strongly influenced by it. See if you can figure out the problem with each one before reading the accompanying explanation.

Primitive ** Error — (Explained above).

Primates = a grouping of humans, apes, and monkeys into a single scientific classification. ** Error — Humans, who are made in the image of God, have dominion over the animal world and cannot be classified with them.

Early Humans / Modern man ** Error — Implies that humans have evolved and that people are now different than they were in the past.

Cavemen ** Error — Almost always used in an Evolutionary sense, implying that people who lived in caves a long time ago were less human than people living today.

Stone Age = A theoretical “prehistoric” time period when “evolving” humans were supposedly learning to use stone tools and weapons. ** Error — Various groups of people may have been forced to use stone tools and weapons after the flood, or after the Tower of Babel, but these people’s ancestors were involved in metal forging and probably had metal tools and weapons which would rival the ones we have today.

Civilization = defined as “an advanced state of human society.” ** Error — Implies that

humans have advanced from a primitive state and have become “civilized.”

Backward society ** Error — Implies that societies have evolved forward and, thus, can migrate backward in a direction from which they never came.

Early life forms / Highly-developed life forms ** Error — Implies that life forms have evolved.

Developed the ability to ??? - Often used in describing the abilities of different animals. ** Error — Implies that animals, through Evolution, have developed certain abilities which their ancestors did not have.

Related to / Part of the same family ** Error — Often used in describing different animals--such as the electric eel and the electric catfish--implying that they have evolved from a common ancestor.

Prehistoric ** Error — The Bible tells us what happened from the moment time began. There is no such thing as “prehistoric”--except what God was doing before He began to create.

Throughout human history ** Error — Implies that human history is shorter (more recent) than all of history. In reality it is, but only by five days.

Millions of years ** Error — Time has only existed for about 6,000 years, and eternity will be upon us--we will be beyond time--long before the first million years ever gets close.

You old fossil / Older than dirt ** Error — Often used to imply that something is extremely old, conjuring up thoughts of millions of years.

Animal Rights ** Error — Evolution says that humans evolved from animals, and animals, therefore (being in essence the same as humans), are just as valuable and should have the same rights. The Bible says that God made humans unique--in His own image, to become His children--and that He has given us animals for food, clothing, etc. [Even though God killed the first animal that ever died, killed more animals (in the flood) than any human being has ever seen, and commands that an animal that kills a human should be destroyed, He does not condone the neglect of, or cruelty to animals.]

The LORD God made garments of skin for Adam and his wife and clothed them. Genesis 3:21

If a bull gores a man or a woman to death, the bull must be stoned to death, . . . Exodus 21:28

A righteous man cares for the needs of his animal, . . . Proverbs 12:10

Mother Nature / Nature (capitalized) ** Error — A personification of nature overlooks the sovereignty of God and is often used by Evolutionists, occultists, and members of false religions in an attempt to credit natural forces with creating and improving life. *** Worshiping “Mother Earth” (who is, of course, nothing but a big dirt ball) has been a recurring occultic problem for thousands of years and is currently gaining momentum with the help of Evolution.

9-d. Where Did Cain Get His Wife?

One of the criticisms the Word of God has received is that it speaks of Cain--the first person ever born--having a wife, without telling us where she came from. This so-called mystery is easily and logically explained by the simple fact that Adam and Eve had other children who intermarried. If the children of Adam and Eve had not married each other, the human race would have ended when their generation died. [Duh!] Cain most likely married his sister, or he could have waited a number of years and married a niece, a great niece, etc. Remember that his father lived for 930 years and most likely had a very large number of children. By the time the Bible mentions Cain's wife, he is about to begin building a city. This indicates there was not only a marriage partner available, there was already a growing population.

So God created man in his own image, in the image of God he created him, male and female, he created them. God blessed them and said to them, "Be fruitful and increase in number; fill the earth and subdue it." Genesis 1:27,28

It's important to mention here that the earliest generations of people (or animals) would not have suffered from the biological problems presently associated with the marrying of close relatives--the birth defects commonly resulting in their children. We, again, are suffering from the accumulated results of 6,000 years of the curse of Adam's sin. Biologically, we are far worse off.

9-e. Continental Separation, Animal Distribution, and the Ice Age — Two Theories.

Theory # 1. Practically all scientists believe that the earth's continents were originally part of a single mass of land which somehow became divided. (They base this theory upon the shape of the continents and a study of the ocean floor.) [32] There is a verse in the Bible which seems to indicate that they are right. In Genesis 10:25, we read the following statement; *"Two sons were born to Eber: One was named Peleg, because in his time the earth was divided; his brother was named Joktan."* (Peleg means "to divide" or "division.") This "division," as written in the original Hebrew language, was evidently talking about a physical geographic separation, as the word "Peleg" literally means to "separate or canal by water." What is important to note is that this division occurred at around the same time as God's judgment on the human race causing them to speak different languages and scattering them over all the earth.

The LORD said, "If as one people speaking the same language they have begun to do this, then nothing they plan to do will be impossible for them. Come, let us go down and confuse their language so they will not understand each other." So the LORD scattered them from there over all the earth, and they stopped building the city. Genesis 11:6-8

If the Bible is saying that the individual continents were created at this time, then this is the explanation of how the descendants of the animals which came off of Noah's ark got distributed to all parts of the earth. They were already there when the land divided (as were the people).

Theory # 2. There is an alternative theory on this subject which I would also like to mention. This theory suggests that the continental separation occurred during the world-wide flood and the animals were distributed later via two different methods. The first method was by being transported to the various continents by ship, either as cargo (livestock or animals used for trade) or as stowaways (rats, mice, etc. hiding in grain). The second method was by migrating the short distances between continents--at their closest points--on land bridges which were above sea level during the Ice Age. It is theorized that the Ice Age would have significantly lowered the level of the ocean as water evaporated, came down over the land, and froze, forming the enormous glaciers scientists claim once existed.

These land bridges, which were normally slightly below the surface, became exposed and the animals were able to migrate across.

The “ice age” resulted from the accumulation of volcanic ash in the atmosphere during the world-wide flood (as “the springs of the deep burst forth” causing an enormous amount of volcanic activity) and from the collapse of the vapor canopy. When the canopy was destroyed, the greenhouse effect--which had kept the earth universally warm--ended, and the volcanic ash blocked out much of the sun. The temperature at the poles dropped extremely low, extremely fast. As the water came down from the canopy and up from the ground, the North and South “ends” of the earth were quickly covered in ice. Evidence shows this happened very fast, as scientists have discovered (near the poles) frozen woolly mammoths with undigested buttercups in their stomachs [12], frozen fruit trees with the fruit still on them (covered by mounds of gravel) [32], and redwood trees buried under massive ice deposits. [32]

In the six hundredth year of Noah's life, . . . the springs of the great deep burst forth, and the floodgates of the heavens were opened. Genesis 7:11

9-f. A Creation Scientist Is Not An Oddity.

As you can see by now, all true science agrees with the Bible, even if all so-called scientists do not. What you may not know, however, are the numbers. There are actually a lot of scientists who acknowledge a transcendent Creator, most of whom are Christians. (Strangely, there are some who are not.)

Here are a few noteworthy examples of scientists from the past who “are” Christians (as they are now in heaven): Professor A. E. Wilder Smith, who is featured in the “Origins” Video series (sources # 5 through 10 used for this book). Professor Smith mastered seven languages and earned three doctorates (Ph.D. Dr.es.Sc., Dr.Sc. F.R.I.C) through his studies at Oxford University, the University of Reading, the University of London, the University of Geneva, and E.T.H. of Zurich. / Wernher Von Braun, 1912-1977, one of the leading scientists in rocket technology for the space program. [19D] / Sir Isaac Newton 1642-1727 / Michael Faraday 1791-1867 / Louis Pasteur 1822-1895, / Lord Kelvin 1824-1907 / James Clerk Maxwell 1831-1879. [28] / The names of several other gifted scientists who are Christians can be found in the sources of information at the end of this book.

The problem here is not simply the numbers. It is also the fact that Creation Scientists are routinely ignored by the greater Evolutionist science-fiction community as well as by the secular media.

*We know that we are children of God, and that the whole world is under the control of the evil one.
1 John 5:19*

If this comes as a surprise, then you need to expand or, more advisedly, change your media.

. . . my people are destroyed from lack of knowledge. Hosea 4:6

Chapter B-9

CONCLUSION & A WARNING

The Bible says God created the universe. (Logic and wisdom agree.) It says He did it in six days, approximately 6,000 years ago. (Physical science, physics, astronomy, geology, archaeology, and nature agree.) It says humans are the ultimate part of His physical creation and He gave us dominion over the earth. (Language, knowledge, education, technology, creativity, and construction agree.) It says the reason He created us was to love us. (The establishment of the family, the knowledge of morality, and the beauty of creation agree.) It says even though the original two people were created good, they rebelled against God, thus, the human race became evil. (History and current events agree.) It says that at one point, the human race became so evil that God destroyed it with a world-wide flood. (Geology and paleontology agree.) It says this judgment occurred around 4,000 years ago and killed all except for eight people. (The earth's population and growth rate agree.) It says that today the majority of the human race is still in rebellion against Him. (The wide spread acceptance of the Theory of Evolution agrees.) It says we have all descended from the original two people, have all been born with a rebellious nature, and have all sinned against God. (Our memory, thoughts, speech, and actions agree.) It says because of our sin, we have been separated from God. (Experience agrees.) It says God still loves us and wants to forgive us. (Restrained judgment agrees.) It says that to be able to forgive us, He stepped into our world and suffered physical death--taking upon Himself the justly required punishment for our sins. (History agrees.)

The Old Testament manuscripts (which foretold that Jesus would come into the world to die for our sins) were preserved more accurately than any writings which have ever been kept throughout history. [40] The New Testament (which reports that Jesus did come into the world to die for our sins) is supported by more than 24,000 manuscripts (> 5,300 Greek, >10,000 Latin Vulgate, > 9,300 other), the earliest ones written within forty-five years of Jesus' earthly visit. [44 & 70] No historical event recorded in the Bible has ever been disproved. (Many events that skeptics have claimed were wrong have been proven to be true over time.)

Compare the manuscript validation for the New Testament with the manuscript validation supporting the existence of certain other historical figures.

<u>Historical figure / Book</u>	<u>Number of manuscripts</u>	<u>Length of time between actual events and earliest manuscripts.</u>
Bible New Testament	> 24,000	45 years
Plato	7	1,200 years
Herodotus	8	1,300 years
Sophocles	193	1,400 years
Aristotle	49	1,400 years

[sources 44 & 70]

It says that if we repent of our sins--turn away from our rebellion in favor of His authority--and trust exclusively and completely in His death for our forgiveness, we will spend all of eternity in heaven. If we don't, we will spend all of eternity in hell. (You have to take this one on faith.) It says that He--the One who created heaven and earth--is the only way to get to heaven from earth. (Logic agrees.) It says He is now calling us to salvation. (Your activity at this moment agrees.)

The Bible also says that time is running out to accept God's offer of forgiveness, for the next world-wide judgment is about to occur. In addition to the Bible being in total agreement with history, nature, the sciences, and the realities of daily experience, it also agrees with future headlines. It is filled with 100% accurate prophecies, proving in yet another way that it truly is the Word of God. Many of these prophecies have already been fulfilled, while many more are yet to come. The most significant ones for our day concern the removal of all Christians from the earth (in an event which people commonly refer to as the "rapture"),

For the Lord himself will come down from heaven, with a loud command, with the voice of the archangel and with the trumpet call of God, and the dead in Christ will rise first. After that, we who are still alive and are left will be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air. And so we will be with the Lord forever. 1 Thessalonians 4:16-17

followed by seven years of the most horrible judgment the world ever has or ever will experience (worse than the flood). This time is referred to in the book of Revelation as the "tribulation."

For then there will be great distress, unequaled from the beginning of the world until now—and never to be equaled again. Matthew 24:21

These are they who have come out of the great tribulation; . . . Revelation 7:14

The Bible says that during this "tribulation," as during the flood, almost all of the people and animals on earth will die. This time, however, judgment is going to take an entirely different form. While the flood was a single event brought about by an exclusive act of God, the tribulation will be a series of events brought about by the providence of God. The Lord has at many times throughout history used evil people to punish evil people.

I will bring the most wicked of the nations to take possession of their houses; I will put an end to the pride of the mighty, and their sanctuaries will be desecrated. Ezekiel 7:24

During the tribulation, this form of judgment, combined with simply allowing the fallen nature of humanity and the world to take its course, is going to result in much of the destruction. There will be famines, plagues, earthquakes, and violent killing everywhere. Animals will even take part in the slaughter. There will be wars (some of them possibly nuclear), with what will most likely be World War III, resulting in the death of a third of humanity. There will be hail and fire which will destroy a third of the earth's vegetation, and what may be a giant meteorite which will destroy a third of everything in the ocean, both ships and sea life. (It is described as - "something like a huge mountain, all ablaze, being thrown into the sea." - Revelation 8:8.) Later during the tribulation, everything in the sea will die. People will be scorched by the sun, suffer excruciatingly painful sores, and be tortured by demons for a period of five months. During this period of demonic torture, people will seek to die but will not be able to. At the very end, just before all of life on earth is about to be destroyed, Jesus will come back to stop it. At the moment of His return, He will end all the fighting and remove the rest of the evil. He is going to put to death--instantly, by an act of His will--every person left who has rejected Him. He will then throw Satan into a spiritual prison for a thousand years. He will then begin to heal the people who have accepted Him during the tribulation (and survived) and start a thousand year reign as King of the earth, physically ruling from Jerusalem. All of us who have faithfully served Him in our

earthly lives will help Him rule during this thousand years (in glorified bodies as Jesus had when He rose from the grave).

[All scripture from the book of Revelation unless noted otherwise]

Famines (Revelation 6:8) / Plagues (6:8) / Earthquakes (6:12 & 11:13 & 16:18) / Violent killings (6:4) / Animals kill people (6:8) / Wars (6:2) / Possible nuclear war (8:10-12) / 1/3 of mankind killed (9:15-16) / Hail and fire destroy 1/3 of all vegetation (8:7) / Probable meteorite (8:8) / Death of everything in the sea (16:3) / People scorched by the sun (16:8) / Painful sores (16:2) / Demonic torture while people are unable to die (9:3-11) / Jesus returns and puts the rebellious to death (19:11-21) / Satan imprisoned (20:2,3) / 1000 year reign where we help rule the earth (20:6) / Glorified bodies (1 Corinthians 15:39-44)

The Bible also tells of certain signs (events) which will be occurring shortly before the “rapture” and the beginning of this time of judgment, so that we would know when the time was short. God has graciously given us this warning, so we will get busy trying to encourage people to accept salvation, or receive it ourselves if we haven’t already. These signs will be like the birth pains a woman experiences before giving birth: They will increase in both strength and frequency and then the “great event” will occur. As you read through the following prophetic verses from the book of Matthew with the accompanying list of current events, see how close to rapture and judgment you think we are.

Prophetic Scripture.

“. . . what will be the sign of your coming and of the end of the age?” Jesus answered: “Watch out that no one deceives you. For many will come in my name, claiming, 'I am the Christ,' and will deceive many. You will hear of wars and rumors of wars, but see to it that you are not alarmed. Such things must happen, but the end is still to come. Nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom. There will be famines and earthquakes in various places. All these are the beginning of birth pains. Then you will be handed over to be persecuted and put to death, and you will be hated by all nations because of me. . . And this gospel of the kingdom will be preached in the whole world as a testimony to all nations, and then the end will come.” Matthew 24:3-9,14

The word “nation” in this passage is translated from the Greek word “ethnos,” which is related to the word “ethnic.” “Nation shall rise against nation” is referring to conflicts which will be fought between various races and cultures.

Jesus also included “*pestilences*” as one of these signs. This was recorded by Luke, but not by Matthew. (*See Luke 21:10.*)

Prophecy - Current events.

False Christs - There have reportedly been hundreds of people in the last half of the 20th century claiming to be the Christ (the promised one who has come to “save the elect”)--Jim Jones, Charles Manson, and multitudes of others around the world.

Wars - In the first 80 years of the 20th century, there were more wars fought than in any other 200 consecutive years of history. It was also the only time that the whole world was at war and it happened twice during this period.

Nations will rise against nations - According to a 1993 article in the New York Times magazine, there were 48 ethnic battles which were presently being fought or had recently been fought around the world. Except for the poles and North and South America, they basically covered the globe. A statement from this article by U.S. Senator Daniel Patrick Moynihan said that the defining form of conflict in the era ahead would be “ethnic.” [54]

Famines - According the World Health Organization (an agency of the United Nations), in the last decade we have entered into what is officially known as the “Age of Famine.” According to this organization, one-third of the world’s population is starving--with 4 million resulting deaths per year--and another one-third is underfed.

Earthquakes - According to data available from the National Earthquake Information Center, major earthquakes have been occurring throughout the 20th century in a cyclical time pattern. When graphing the quantity of major earthquakes--those with a magnitude of 7.0 or greater--which have occurred each year--1900 through 1996--roughly a 30-year cyclical pattern emerges. The quantity of major earthquakes has increased centering around the years 1911, 1943, 1973 and is greatly increasing now, and has decreased between each of these approximately 30 year highs. When viewing the mean line of these earthquakes on a chart, this increasing and decreasing pattern closely resembles the highs and lows of the birth pains a woman experiences shortly before giving birth. [45] [This is in contrast to an often repeated rumor which states that major earthquakes are increasing in quantity each year.]

Pestilences - In 1999, the Unaided/World Health Organization (an agency of the United Nations) estimated that 33.6 million people currently had AIDS, 16.3 million people had already died from it, and 5.6 million new cases would be contracted in 1999. They were also expecting 2.6 million deaths in 1999. [61] There are also other infectious diseases occurring more often around the world, many incurable and some deadly: tuberculous, ebola, many other ravaging sexually transmitted diseases in addition to AIDS, and an ever increasing problem with antibiotic-resistant bacteria.

Antibiotic-resistant bacteria have no genetic information except that which has been received from an already existing bacteria. There is gene duplication, reshuffling of existing genes, defective genes which have a loss of information, and bacterium which “inject” information into other bacterium, but there is never the creation of any “new” information. [19G][19L]

Persecution against Christians - There have been more Christians killed because of their testimony and faith in God in the last 100 years than in the preceding 1,900 years combined. [43]

Gospel preached around the world - With the advent of the radio, television, short wave radio, communications satellites, and other 20th century communication and travel technologies, God’s offer of salvation is being broadcast around the globe.

Before concluding:

Before concluding, there are two more things which need to be said about God’s coming judgment. First, if you find this difficult to believe, that this vile, rebellious world is about to suffer the wrath of a holy, just, omnipotent God, you must remember something. Most of the geological evidence which you have just read about is the result of the first world-wide judgment: millions of fossils of land animals buried by flood waters all over the earth, sea life fossils on every mountain range, and sediment layers which spread out on multiple continents. The evidence clearly shows that the first world-wide judgment was a reality. The prophetic signs show that the second is about to be.

As it was in the days of Noah, so it will be at the coming of the Son of Man. For in the days before the flood, people were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, up to the day Noah entered the ark; and they knew nothing about what would happen until the flood came and took them all away. That is how it will be at the coming of the Son of Man. Matthew 24:36

Second, it's important to understand that even if the tribulation is still some time away, judgment to a lesser degree is already pounding the world. Here are some additional verses from God's Word. As you read them, see where you think we are in relation to God's coming judgment '**at the end of this age.**'

Scripture - *The wrath of God is being revealed from heaven against all the godlessness and wickedness of men who suppress the truth by their wickedness, since what may be known about God is plain to them, because God has made it plain to them. For since the creation of the world God's invisible qualities— his eternal power and divine nature— have been clearly seen, being understood from what has been made, so that men are without excuse. For although they knew God, they neither glorified him as God nor gave thanks to him, but their thinking became futile and their foolish hearts were darkened. Although they claimed to be wise, they became fools and exchanged the glory of the immortal God for images made to look like mortal man and birds and animals and reptiles. Therefore God gave them over in the sinful desires of their hearts to sexual impurity for the degrading of their bodies with one another. They exchanged the truth of God for a lie, and worshiped and served created things rather than the Creator—who is forever praised. Amen. Because of this, God gave them over to shameful lusts. Even their women exchanged natural relations for unnatural ones. In the same way the men also abandoned natural relations with women and were inflamed with lust for one another. Men committed indecent acts with other men, and received in themselves the due penalty for their perversion. Romans 1:18-27*

Well, if you have not yet asked Jesus to be your Lord and Savior, this is my final plea: **Do it now!** He loves you, He died for your sins, He wants to forgive you, He wants you in His family. (For very specific instructions on how to do this, turn to the chapter “So What Should You Do?”) If you have, then try to get everyone else you know to do it too. Tell them how awesome He is, buy them a Bible, invite them to church, introduce them to Christian radio, give them a copy of this book, and pray like there's no tomorrow, because for them there may not be.

And I'll say to myself, “You have plenty of good things laid up for many years. Take life easy; eat, drink and be merry.” But God said to him, 'You fool! This very night your life will be demanded from you.' Luke 12:19,20

(It is not illegal to tell people about God while attending school, nor, in most situations, while at your job. Just don't do it instead of working. If you have any questions regarding this subject, contact one of the Christian legal organizations listed at the end of this book.)

Yes, you may get laughed at, but does that really matter?

First of all, you must understand that in the last days scoffers will come, scoffing and following their own evil desires. They will say, “Where is this 'coming' he promised? Ever since our fathers died, everything goes on as it has since the beginning of creation.” But they deliberately forget that long ago by God's word the heavens existed and the earth was formed out of water and by water. By these waters also the world of that time was deluged and destroyed. 2 Peter 3:3-6

Isn't it worth it, even if only one of them accepts? There were scoffers who laughed at Noah, too--who spent 120 years building an ocean liner in the middle of a field. That didn't stop him, however, he kept trying to warn them.

. . . if he did not spare the ancient world when he brought the flood on its ungodly people, but protected Noah, a preacher of righteousness, and seven others; . . . 2 Peter 2:5

I'm sure the scoffers referred to Noah and his sons as "a bunch of old fools." Sadly, we now refer to those scoffers as "a bunch of old fossils."

A final note: Charles Darwin and Adolph Hitler could have been forgiven for everything they did. (It appears that Jeffrey Dahmer was). If, at the very end of their lives, these men would have truly repented and asked Jesus to be their Lord and Savior, He would have forgiven their sins and welcomed them into heaven with open arms. Unfortunately, there is no indication that they did (aside from one flimsy rumor about Darwin). If this is the case, then these two men are at this very moment suffering in agony in the pitch black, sulfuric fires of hell. While you have been reading this book, they have been crying and grinding their teeth in pain. While you are sleeping tonight, they will be crying and grinding their teeth in pain. While you are eating breakfast in the morning, they will be crying and grinding their teeth in pain. While you go through this week, this month, this year, and for all of eternity, they will be crying and grinding their teeth in pain. You can't get any more foolish than that.

. . . then the Lord knows how to rescue godly men from trials and to hold the unrighteous for the day of judgment, while continuing their punishment. 2 Peter 2:9

And throw that worthless servant outside, into the darkness, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth. Matthew 25:30

Then they will go away to eternal punishment, but the righteous to eternal life. Matthew 25:46

But the cowardly, the unbelieving, the vile, the murderers, the sexually immoral, those who practice magic arts, the idolaters, and all liars—their place will be in the fiery lake of burning sulfur. Revelation 21:8

A final plea (from the author of this book): If you know an atheist, an Evolutionist, or the member of a false religion, start praying for him / her with all of your heart. By praying for the same grace and mercy which has kept us out of hell, perhaps we can help keep another person from going there too. Remember, none of us deserves forgiveness.

SETI' & THE THEORY OF EVOLUTION, IS THERE INTELLIGENT LIFE ON OTHER PLANETS?

If you are like most people, you have never considered the connection between the Theory of Evolution and the pseudo scientific endeavor known as “SETI” — the Search for Extra-Terrestrial Intelligence. I refer to this so-called scientific mission by its acronym “SETI” (which rhymes with Betty), as this is how it is addressed by the parties who are (or were) involved, including the United States Government. Yes, the U.S. Government spent more than 60 million of our tax dollars trying to detect intelligent aliens. They stopped funding SETI in 1993, but private funding started it back up in 1995 under the name the “Phoenix Project.” [29][41][60] Now, while it may be wrong to say that the Theory of Evolution is solely responsible for people engaging in this activity, it is definitely a major contributor. You see, because people have been convinced that life evolved on this planet, many of them are now looking to see if it might have evolved on other planets.

Knowing the truth, however, that God created the universe and everything in it, we know that life did not “evolve” into existence anywhere. What someone may not know, though, is whether or not God created life on other planets. In this incredibly vast universe, with its estimated 100 billion galaxies, did He perhaps put other life forms out there somewhere, some of them intelligent? A short trip into His Word (the very first chapter) gives us the answer: “**No!**” There is no other intelligent life in the universe, except for the spiritual realm of angels and God. The entire physical universe was created (and continues to exist) solely for the benefit of the earth and its inhabitants, people being the ultimate purpose.

This fact is made obvious by the order in which God brought the physical universe into existence, as well as by His stated purpose for the celestial bodies. In *Genesis 1*, we read that God created the earth over a period of six days, and all of the celestial bodies in the middle of that six day period. We also read that He created the sun, moon, and stars for the purpose of “separating day from night, marking seasons, days and years, and to shine light upon the earth.” You see, it’s all for the benefit of the earth.

And God said, “Let there be lights in the expanse of the sky to separate the day from the night, and let them serve as signs to mark seasons and days and years, and let them be lights in the expanse of the sky to give light on the earth.” Genesis 1:14-15

The earth’s, and much more precisely, “man’s” centrality to the universe is made further evident by the overall effects of human sin. When Adam and Eve disobeyed God, it affected the entire creation, not just people and not just the earth. The entire universe became subject to the universal law of decay (the Second Law of Thermodynamics). If there were any beings on other planets, they too

would be suffering because of the sin of Adam and Eve, but without any contact. It's also important to note that this universal decay will end when the last person who is going to accept salvation does so (and has been revealed as the last one).

The creation waits in eager expectation for the sons of God to be revealed. For the creation was subjected to frustration, not by its own choice, but by the will of the one who subjected it, in hope that the creation itself will be liberated from its bondage to decay and brought into the glorious freedom of the children of God. Romans 8:19-21

We may, of course, wonder how billions of stars, millions of light-years away, benefit the earth and its inhabitants. Why did God make the universe so incredibly large? Before answering this question, we need to understand something about our infinitely powerful Creator. To Him, creating a hundred billion stars around the earth probably required no more effort than sending ripples out to the edge of a pond after dropping a rock in the middle of it. All it takes for God to create is to say, "Let there be."

And God said, "Let there be lights in the expanse of the sky" . . . And it was so. Genesis 1:14-15

The only reason He took six days to create the earth and its universe (as opposed to doing it instantaneously), was to establish the concept of a seven day week. He established six days to work and one day to rest and worship Him.

Remember the Sabbath day by keeping it holy. Six days you shall labor and do all your work, but the seventh day is a Sabbath to the LORD your God. . . For in six days the LORD made the heavens and the earth, the sea and all that is in them, but He rested on the seventh day. Exodus 20:8-11

This analogy of the rock and the ripples in the pond is not only helpful when discussing the incredible power of God, it is also helpful when expressing the significance of the things He has made. Just as the rock is far more significant than the ripples around it, so life on earth is far more significant than the universe around it. An extremely important yet rarely mentioned fact is that a single human cell is approximately 85 million times as complex as all the non-living matter of the universe. Creation through the microscope is far more incredible than it is through the telescope.

The information contained in and, thus, required to describe all the processes and components of a living human cell is estimated to be 20 billion exponential bits. The information contained in and, thus, required to describe all the processes and components of the entire non-living universe is estimated to only be 235 exponential bits. $20,000,000,000 / 235 = 85,106,383$. [12] (The complexity of the human cell has been compared to the complexity of a major industrialized city, while a star is probably about as complex as a camp fire.)

As growing numbers of Evolutionists scan the universe in search of intelligent life, they are foolishly overlooking this fact. While they boldly claim that the incredible order and complexity of the human cell fails to prove intelligent design, they aim their detection equipment out into space, ready to accept any hint of order as proof of extra-terrestrial intelligence. They are looking for something as simple as regular intervals of electromagnetic waves.

Now, back to our question: "How can billions of stars, millions of light-years away be for our benefit?" The answer comes in two realms. Physically, scientists are gathering data which shows that distant stars may have a minute physical effect upon the earth and upon all the life forms here (affecting the "antenna" of the DNA) and may have had a greater effect before the flood. It is thought they may have played a part in helping to re-energize the earth's magnetic field, thus helping to maintain it and the vapor canopy which it supported. [12]

Spiritually, the purpose of these celestial bodies is obvious. Billions of stars spread throughout

trillions of miles of empty space, all held in place by nothing other than the incredible power of God: They are there to show us how awesome He is. (There is not enough mass in the universe to hold the universe together.) The immensity of the universe, like the intricacy of the living cell, should cause us to both stand in awe, and bow in humility before our magnificent Creator. The reality that the physical universe exists for the benefit of man is scientifically known as the “Anthropic Principle.”

He spreads out the northern skies over empty space; he suspends the earth over nothing. Job 26:7

The heavens declare the glory of God; the skies proclaim the work of his hands. Psalm 19:1

The fact that there is no known natural force holding the universe together is scientifically known as the “Missing Mass Problem.” (Evolutionists have come up with an imaginary substance they call “dark matter,” matter which can’t be seen, to explain away this problem). A similar situation also exists in regard to the atom. The nucleus of the atom is made up of positively-charged protons which should, according to natural law, repel each other. There is no known physical explanation for why all atoms do not immediately disintegrate and all creation immediately end. [25] The Bible, however, tells us that it is by Jesus’ power that all things were created, and it is by Jesus’ power that all things hold together.

He is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn over all creation. For by him all things were created: things in heaven and on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or powers or rulers or authorities; all things were created by him and for him. He is before all things, and in him all things hold together. Colossians 1:15-17

So, God’s Word clearly indicates there is no other intelligent life in the universe, except again for the angels and Him. This means that anyone who suggests otherwise does so out of ignorance or with evil motives. The question, therefore, we need to ask is, “What evil motives?” What possible wickedness can be accomplished by fostering a belief in extra-terrestrial intelligence?

The answer to this question, like the previous one, comes in two realms. From the human perspective, if Evolutionists can get people to believe in the possibility of life on other planets, because they first believed in Evolution, they can get them to more firmly believe Evolution. It’s another case of circular reasoning. Look at the process: First the Evolutionists tell people, “We believe life happened by chance on earth.” Then they tell them, “If it happened here, it may have happened there.” Next they tell them, “We think we have found evidence of it there.” (The supposed signs of life in the now famous “Mars Rock.” See note below.) Finally they conclude, “We believe it could have happened there because we believe it happened here, and since we believe we found evidence of it there, it proves it happened here.”

The “Mars Rock” — A potato size rock found in Antarctica, believed to be a meteorite from Mars, contained microscopically small globules of carbon (1/1000 the diameter of a human hair) which externally resembled bacteria, as well as certain chemicals and minerals which Evolutionists claimed had resulted from once living organisms. // The reality of it is: (1). The shapes were too small to be bacteria (too small to hold enough genetic information to be reproducing organisms). (2). Evidence shows that these shapes were formed at temperatures which were too hot for life to exist. (3). The chemicals found--which are sometimes produced by living things--are also found in soot and diesel exhaust, and are quite common in asteroids. (4). The minerals found--which can be produced by living organisms--can also be produced by processes which have nothing to do with life. (5). The ratio of two types of sulfur found in the rock is inconsistent with life. (6). Even if microscopic life had, at one time, been present in this rock, there is no reason to believe that it did not enter during the unknown length of time that it sat on the earth. The pattern of organic compounds is like that found in the surrounding antarctic ice. [19E] [19O][41]

From Satan’s perspective, he not only wants people to believe there are extra-terrestrial beings ‘out there’ so they more firmly believe Evolution, he wants them to believe they are here visiting the

earth. This is yet another strategy for deceiving people into accepting his guidance. Demons often pretend to be some kind of friendly or helpful entity--such as the spirit of a departed loved one, the god represented by some pagan idol, or the power behind some mystical ability--in order to get people to accept their guidance.

Let no one be found among you . . . who is a medium or spiritist or who consults the dead. Anyone who does these things is detestable to the LORD, . . . Deuteronomy 18:10-12

Do I mean then that a sacrifice offered to an idol is anything, or that an idol is anything? No, but the sacrifices of pagans are offered to demons, not to God, and I do not want you to be participants with demons. 1 Corinthians 10:19,20

Once when we were going to the place of prayer, we were met by a slave girl who had a spirit by which she predicted the future. She earned a great deal of money for her owners by fortune-telling. Acts 16:16

Evidently, masquerading as aliens is growing more popular.

And no wonder, for Satan himself masquerades as an angel of light. 2 Corinthians 11:14

Put on the full armor of God so that you take your stand against the devil's schemes. Ephesians 6:11

Recently, this deception became both publicly and painfully obvious when the members of two totally separate cults fell for it (the "Heavens Gate" cult in California in 1997 and the "Gods Salvation Church" cult in Texas in 1998). Both of these groups—according to news reports--were awaiting the imminent scheduled arrival of alien spacecraft. The group in California ultimately became so demonically deceived they were led to commit mass suicide.

He (Satan) was a murderer from the beginning, not holding to the truth, for there is no truth in him. When he lies, he speaks his native language, for he is a liar and the father of lies. John 8:44

Unfortunately, this deception is also spreading. Not only did the members of these two cults fall for it, according to one poll, 48% of Americans now believe in UFO's. [60] There are also books which are being written and published whose authors claim that the guidance they contain was provided by alien intelligence. These "aliens" tell these authors they are the "chosen channels" through which they will relay their messages to the rest of the human race. (These books are found in the "New Age" sections of book stores and libraries).

The Spirit clearly says that in later times some will abandon the faith and follow deceiving spirits and things taught by demons. Such teachings come through hypocritical liars, whose consciences have been seared as with a hot iron. 1 Timothy 4:1,2

The deception is also international. A recent poll taken in Germany revealed that 17% of their population believe that the earth is being visited by alien spacecraft. [19c]

Before concluding, there is one final step I would like to take in seeking to "un-mask E.T." I would like to walk you through each step of this deceptive process as I believe it was accomplished in the lives of these cult members and authors (and as it is probably being accomplished in the lives of others). While this is only an educated guess, for I do not know the mind of the demonic nor do I have information on these people other than what is available through the media, it is based upon the Word of God and what can be clearly seen happening in the United States (etc.) today.

Here is the process.....

We know that we are children of God, and that the whole world is under the control of the evil one. 1 John 5:19

Step 1. Demons try to keep people ignorant of the Bible and of true science, so these people are neither aware of the existence of demons, nor knowledgeable of the facts of the universe, (i.e. it was created recently, rapidly, fully mature, and solely for the benefit of the earth).

Step 2. Demons suggest the idea of extra-terrestrial intelligence by introducing such thoughts as, “The universe is so big, there must be other inhabited worlds out there,” and “Since early humans were so ‘primitive,’ alien intelligence must be responsible for ancient technology.”

Step 3. Demons seek to mainstream the idea of extra-terrestrial intelligence by suggesting and encouraging the production of books, movies, computer games, toys, T-shirts, posters, etc. which foster the idea.

Step 4. Demons try to make belief in extra-terrestrial intelligence appear legitimate by inspiring some highly educated and well respected people to search for it. Some of the world’s leading astronomers working at major universities (such as Berkeley, Harvard, and Cornell) are searching for it [42], massive radio telescopes are used to look for it,

Radio telescopes at (1) Arecibo, Puerto Rico, (2) the Ames Research Center at Mountainview, California, and (3) the Goldstone Deep Space Communications Complex in the Mojave Desert are used to try to locate intelligent life elsewhere in the universe. [60]

the government formerly ran the SETI program, NASA made the “Mars Rock” claims and has spent billions of dollars looking for evidence of life on other planets [41], and the two Voyager spacecraft (launched by the United States Government in 1977) carried messages “for any aliens which they might encounter” when they were launched into space. [33A]

The Voyager spacecraft carried 12" copper records (LPs), titled “Sounds of Earth” which explained our geology, chemistry, mathematics, and “evolution.” They also carried pictures describing the supposed “evolution of molecules to man.” In addition, representatives from nations around the world (including President Jimmy Carter) sent their greetings to these chance alien beings. They even included recordings of the sounds that whales make to each other (possibly by ignorance, indicating that we wanted to mate). [19M] [33A]

An additional result of all this is an increasing respect and willingness by some in the media to cover various E.T. and UFO claims.

Step 5. Demons seek to further confuse reality and fantasy by suggesting and encouraging books and movies which cleverly blur the distinction. One recent movie was particularly deceptive. It showed a high ranking U.S. Government official—portraying himself in his actual government role, making comments on SETI—the actual government program. SETI then (in the movie) accomplished what the actual SETI is designed to accomplish: They contacted alien intelligence, (which is impossible, because it doesn’t exist). Another deceptive aspect of this story was that it evaded the problem of distance (which would prevent alien visitations if they really were out there) by suggesting that it is possible to operate beyond time and space.

At the speed at which the Apollo missions flew to the moon, it would take approximately 822,000 years to get to or from the closest possible location for life to exist elsewhere in the universe, if it did. In this movie, however, they did it instantly. After the sun, the next closest star to the earth (Proxima Centauri) is approximately 25.284 trillion miles away. A space craft traveling at the speed at which the Apollo missions went to the moon (taking three days to travel the approximately 252,711 miles), would take approximately 822,000 years to get to / or from this star. (252,711 miles in three days = 84,237 miles per day. *** 25.284 trillion miles / 84,237 miles per day = 300,150,000 days. *** 300,150,000 days / 365 days per year = 822,329 years). At faster speeds there would be other problems. If it turned out that there was no life around this star, the next one is even farther. [19c]

Step 6. Demons seek to provide current evidence of visiting extra-terrestrials by suggesting that various phenomena are the result of these visitations, possibly causing some phenomena themselves. (According to one study, approximately 90% of all “UFO” claims turn out to be false alarms, but about 10% defy earthly physical explanation.)

And he performed great and miraculous signs, even causing fire to come down from heaven to earth in full view of men. Because of the signs he was given power to do on behalf of the first beast, he deceived the inhabitants of the earth Revelation 13:13,14

Step 7. Once the enemy has successfully accomplished all of the preceding steps, they are then free to make the deception personal. The next phase is to give a person dreams and visions, causing them to believe they have been visited by these alien beings. They sometimes even convince them they have been transported to some other location, such as the inside of an alien spacecraft. One occultic/UFO book I have seen says that the details of most “alien encounters” are only remembered while people are under hypnosis.

When I think my bed will comfort me and my couch will ease my complaint, even then you frighten me with dreams and terrify me with visions, . . . Job 7:13,14

How demons can create and guide people through dreams and visions is beyond my knowledge, but I can tell you--from personal experience--it can seem incredibly real. It puts computer virtual reality to shame. I am not at all surprised that someone would believe one of these “experiences” had actually happened. I also know from a momentary experience which God allowed in my life (perhaps to explain this very point), that a demon can pull a person into a mental state where he would be unable to wake up—to regain control. This ability would ensure that a dream could go uninterrupted, thereby securing the deception.

If a prophet, or one who foretells by dreams, appears among you and announces to you a miraculous sign or wonder, and if the sign or wonder of which he has spoken takes place, and he says, “Let us follow other gods” (gods you have not known) “and let us worship them,” you must not listen to the words of that prophet or dreamer. The LORD your God is testing you to find out whether you love him with all your heart and with all your soul. Deuteronomy 13:1-3

Step 8. One final step (which may or may not occur) is a visible manifestation of a demon claiming to be an alien being. God’s holy angels have the ability to physically manifest, and the rebellious ones may too. If they do, they could certainly use this ability to further perpetrate this lie.

Do not forget to entertain strangers, for by so doing some people have entertained angels without knowing it. Hebrews 13:2

[For a more detailed explanation of how demons deceive, interact, and communicate with people, refer to the chapter “Who is Satan?”]

A final interesting note on this subject: I have heard it suggested that this “alien motif” may be part of the immense deception which the Bible says will occur at the end of the age--around the time of the rapture of the church, the coming of the anti-Christ, and the tribulation.

. . . “what will be the sign of your coming and of the end of the age?” Jesus answered: “Watch out that no one deceives you. Matthew 24:3

The coming of the lawless one will be in accordance with the work of Satan displayed in all kinds of counterfeit miracles, signs and wonders, and in every sort of evil that deceives those who are perishing. They perish because they refused to love the truth and so be saved. For this reason God sends them a powerful delusion so that they will believe the lie and so that all will be condemned who have not believed the truth but have delighted in wickedness. 2 Thessalonians 2:9-12

If you doubt this, that a large portion of the world's population could be duped into accepting an utter fantasy as fact, you must remember: They accepted Evolution.

SOURCES OF INFORMATION

[1] “The Genesis Solution” (Video), Featuring Dr. Ken Ham / Eden Communications (A ministry of Films for Christ Association) / 1832 South Macdonald, Suite 101 / Mesa, Arizona 85210-6134 / Phone # (480) 668-8200

Dr. Ken Ham, Executive Director / Answers in Genesis / P.O. Box 6330 /

Florence, Kentucky 41022-6330 / [www.answersingenesis.org]

[2] “Evolution, Hoax Of The Century” (Video) / Pagan Invasion Series, Movie #6 / Jeremiah Films /

P.O. Box 1710 / Hemet, California 92546 / Phone # (909) 652-1006 / Fax # (909) 652-5848 / [www.jeremiahfilms.com]

[3] “When Two World Views Collide” (Video) Featuring Dr. John D. Morris / Eden Communications

(A ministry of Films for Christ Association) / 1832 South Macdonald, Suite 101/ Mesa, Arizona 85210-6134 / Phone # (480) 668-8200

Dr. John D. Morris, President / Institute for Creation Research / 10946 Woodside Avenue North / Santee, California 92071 / Phone # (619) 448-0900 / Fax # (619) 448-3469 [www.icr.org]

[4] “In the Beginning” (Book) / by Dr. Walter T. Brown / “God's Power And Scriptures Authority” (Video) / Center for Scientific Creation / 5612 N. 20th Place / Phoenix, Arizona 85016 / Phone # (602) 955-7663

[5 through 10] “Origins” (Video Series) Featuring Professor A.E. Wilder Smith

[5] "The Origin of the Universe" / [6] "How The World Came To Be" / [7] "Origin Of Species"

[8] "Origin Of Mankind" / [9] "Origin Of Life" / [10] "The Fossil Record"

Eden Communications (A ministry of Films for Christ Association) / 1832 South Macdonald / Suite 101/ Mesa, Arizona 85210-6134 / Phone # (480) 668-8200

[11] “The Illustrated Origins Answer Book” (Book) / by Paul S. Taylor / Eden Communications /

(A ministry of Films for Christ Association) / 1832 South Macdonald / Suite 101 /

Mesa, Arizona 85210-6134 / Phone # (480) 668-8200

[12] “Creation In Symphony” (Video Series) Featuring Dr. Carl E. Baugh / Take One Video & Post /

3330 Earhart, Suite 106 / Carrollton, Texas 75006 / Phone # (214) 458-9874

Dr. Carl E. Baugh, Director / Creation Evidence Museum /

FM 205 at Paluxy River Bridge / P.O. Box 309 / Glen Rose, Texas 76043

Phone # (254) 897-3200 / Fax # (254) 897-3100

- [13] “The Great Dinosaur Mystery And The Bible” (Book) / by Paul S. Taylor / Master Book Publishers
San Diego, California
Video also available - "The Great Dinosaur Mystery" / Eden Communications
(A ministry of Films for Christ Association) / 1832 South Macdonald, Suite 101/
Mesa, Arizona 85210-6134 / Phone # (480) 668-8200
- [14] “Creation or Evolution—Which?” (Booklet) / by Seiko Tsukioka / Former Instructor Engineering College /
Yamagata University / Japan
- [15] “Creation Moments” (Newsletters) (Formerly “Bible Science News”) /
Creation Moments (Formerly “Bible Science Association, Inc.”) / P.O. Box 260 /
Zimmerman, Minnesota 55398-0260
[A] Volume 34.9, Dec. 1996 / [B] Volume 34.4, May 1996 /
[C] Volume 34.7, Sep./Oct. 1996 / [D] Volume 34.3, Apr. 1996
- [16] “Big Daddy?” (Bible Tract) / Chick Publications / P.O. Box 662 / Chino, California 91780
[A] Information derived from Science, vol. 141, page 636, 1963
[B] Information derived from Scientific American, vol. 200, March 1959
- [17] “The Bible” (Book) Psalm 111.10 & Proverbs 1.7 / by God
- [18] Dr. Duane Gish (Interview with Dr. D. James Kennedy) / “Truths That Transform” Christian television ministry,
1/29/97 / Coral Ridge Ministries / P.O. Box 40 / Ft. Lauderdale Florida 33302
Dr. Duane Gish, Bio-chemist / Institute for Creation Research /
10946 Woodside Avenue North / Santee, California 92071
- [19] “Creation Ex Nihilo” (science magazines) / Answers in Genesis / P.O.Box 6330 /
Florence, Kentucky 41022-6330/ [www.answersingenesis.org]
[A] Vol. 19, # 3 / Jun. 1997 - Aug. 1997 / [B] Vol. 16, # 1 / Dec. 1993 - Feb. 1994
[C] Vol. 19, # 4 / Sep. 1997 - Nov. 1997 / [D] Vol. 16, # 2 / Mar. 1994 - May 1994
[E] Vol. 19, # 1 / Dec. 1996 - Feb. 1997 / [F] Vol. 20, # 2 / Mar. 1998 - May 1998
[G] Vol. 20, # 1 / Dec. 1997 - Feb. 1998 / [H] Vol. 20, # 3 / Jun. 1998 - Aug. 1998
[I] Vol. 18, # 2 / Mar. 1996 - May 1996 / [J] Vol. 18, # 1 / Dec. 1995 - Feb. 1996

[K] Vol. 21, # 1 / Dec. 1998 - Feb. 1999 / [L] Vol. 21, # 2 / Mar. 1999 - May 1999

[M] Vol. 17, # 1 / Dec. 1994 - Feb. 1995 / [N] Vol. 18, # 4 / Sep. 1996 - Nov. 1996

[O] Vol. 19, # 2 / Mar. 1997 - May 1997

[20] “The Dinosaur Mystery Solved” (Video) / “Back to Genesis” series featuring Dr. John D. Morris /
Eden Communications (A ministry of Films for Christ Association) / 1832 South Macdonald, Suite 101 / Mesa,
Arizona 85210-6134 / Phone # (480) 668-8200

Dr. John D. Morris, President / Institute for Creation Research /
10946 Woodside Avenue North / Santee, California 92071

[21] “Noah's Ark— Was There a World Wide Flood?” (Video) / “Ancient Secrets of the Bible” Video Series /
A Group Productions presentation / Group Publishing, Incorporated / P.O. Box 481 / Loveland,
Colorado 80538 / Phone # (970) 669-3836

[22] “The Scientific Case for Creation: 116 Categories of Evidence” (Book) / by Dr. Walter T. Brown /
Center for Scientific Creation / 5612 N. 20th Place / Phoenix, Arizona 85016 / Phone # (602) 955-7663

[23] “The 1994 Worldbook Encyclopedia” (Articles as noted) / A Scott Fetzen Company / Chicago, Illinois

[A] “Darwin, Charles Robert” / [B] “Slavery” / [C] “Communism” / [D] “Human Body” /
[E] “Loch Ness Monster” / [F] “Animals” / [G] “Dogs” / [H] “Turtle” / [I] “Beaver” /
[J] “Coal” / [K] “Inca” / [L] “Maya” [M] “John Dewey”

[24] “Noah's Ark and the Ararat Adventure” (Book) / Dr. John D. Morris, President /
Institute for Creation Research / 10946 Woodside Avenue North / Santee, California 92071

[25] Creation vs. Evolution Seminar 1989 / by Dr. Jobe Martin / Conducted at Fellowship Bible Church North/
Plano, Texas

Dr. Jobe Martin / The Art of Family Living Ministries / P.O. Box 2000 / Dallas, Texas 75221

[26] “Dinosaurs by Design” (Book) / by Dr. Duane Gish / Creation Life Publishers, Inc. / Master Books / 4730 Barnes
Road / Colorado Springs, Colorado 80917 / (719) 591-0800

Dr. Duane Gish, Bio-chemist / Institute for Creation Research /
10946 Woodside Avenue North / Santee, California 92071

- [27] “It Couldn't Have Just Happened” (Book) / by Lawrence O. Richards / Word Publishing /
Dallas, London, Vancouver, Melbourne
- [28] “Back to Genesis” (Radio Ministry) / by Dr. John Morris / Institute for Creation Research /
10946 Woodside Avenue North / Santee, California 92071
- [29] “Answers in Genesis” (Radio Ministry) / P.O.Box 6330 / Florence, Kentucky 41022.
- [30] “Why I Believe in God” (Booklet) / by Dr. D. James Kennedy, Ph.D. / Coral Ridge Ministries / P.O. Box 40
Ft. Lauderdale Florida 33302
- [31] “Empty Cities”(Video) / “Sermons from Science” video series / Featuring Dr. George Sweeting /
Moody Video / A ministry of Moody Bible Institute / 820 N. LaSalle Boulevard / Chicago, Illinois 60610-3248
- [32] “Unlocking the Mysteries of Creation” (Book) / by Dennis R. Peterson, B.S., M.A. /
Creation Resource Foundation / P.O. Box 570 / El Dorado, CA 95623 / (916) 626-4447
- [33] Bob Larson / Bob Larson (Radio) Ministry / P.O. Box 36 A / Denver, Colorado 80236 / [www.bob-larson.com]
[A] “Larson's New Book of Cults” / by Bob Larson / Tyndale House Publishers, Inc. / Wheaton, IL
- [34] “World Magazine” 11/22/97 / God’s World Publications, Incorporated / P.O. Box 2330 /
Asheville, North Carolina 28802-9813
- [35] “1250 Health Care Questions Women Ask” (Book) / by Joe S. McIlhane, Jr., M.D. /
Baker Book House Publishers / Grand Rapids, Michigan 49506
- [36] “Partial-Birth Abortions: Dispelling The Myths” (Pamphlet) / Family Research Council /
801 G Street, NW / Washington, DC 20001
- [37] “Focus on the Family” (Christian ministry) / P.O. Box 35500 / Colorado Springs, CO 80935-3550
[A] “Family News from Dr. James Dobson” (Newsletter) April, 1998
- [38] “A Field Guide to Dinosaurs” (Book) / by David Lambert / Avon Publishers / A Division of the Corporation

959 Eighth Avenue / New York, NY 10019

[39] “The Quest for Noah’s Ark” (Documentary Movie) / aired March 3, 1993 / PAX TV (Channel 67 UHF)
Dallas, Texas

[40] Dr. Gene Getz (Sermon 5/5/91) / Fellowship Bible Church North / Plano, Texas 75075

[41] “Mystic Invasion” (Radio Broadcast) / Aired Wednesday May 19, 1999 /
KCBI Radio 90.9 F.M. Dallas, Texas

Produced by the Institute for Creation Research / 10946 Woodside Avenue North, Santee, CA 92071

[42] “Space Detective” (Newspaper Article) / by Evelyn Nieves / The Dallas Morning News /
April 23, 1999 / Page 47A

[43] Voice of the Martyrs (Christian Ministry) / P.O. Box 443 / Bartlesville, OK 74005

[44] “The Best of Josh McDowell / A Ready Defense” (Book) / compiled by Bill Wilson /
Here’s Life Publishers, Inc. / P.O. Box 1576 / San Bernardino, California 92402

[45] “Impact, Vital Articles on Science/Creation” (pamphlet #295 - January, 1998) /
Institute for Creation Research / 10946 Woodside Avenue North / Santee, California 92071

[46] National Geographic Magazine

[A] Volume 194, No. 6 / Dec. 1998 / Article titled “Dinosaur Embryos” / page 34.

[B] Volume 188, No. 1 / Jul., 1995 / Article titled “Ndoki—Last Place on Earth” / page 2.

[47] Omni Magazine / [A] January 1983, Article titled “Hidden Monsters,” page 108

[48] “Science and Sentiment in America” (Book) / Chapter 11, “John Dewey” / by Morton White /
Oxford University Press / New York, New York

[49] “The Report on Kinsey” (Newspaper Article) / By Jerome Weeks / The Dallas Morning News /
December 4, 1997 / Section C

- [50] “The Firefly Nature Encyclopedia” (Book) / by Firefly Books Ltd. / 3680 Victoria Park Avenue / Willowdale, Ontario M2H 3K1 / Canada
- [51] Freud and His Followers (book) / Chapter IV.2, The Occult) / by Paul Roazen / Alfred A. Knopp Publishers / New York City, New York
- [52] Freud Rediscovered (book) / Page 199 / by Lucy Freeman / Arbor House Publishing / New York City, New York
- [53] Break Point (Christian commentary) / by Chuck Colson of Prison Fellowship Ministry / September 1, 1999 / KCBI Radio / Dallas, Texas
- [54] “As Ethnic Wars Multiply, U.S. Struggles to Meet the Challenge” (Magazine article) / The New York Times Magazine / Sunday, February 7th, 1993
- [55] Eagle Forum (Radio Ministry) / P.O. Box 618 / Alton, IL 62002
- [56] Josh McDowell Radio (Radio Ministry) / Josh McDowell Ministries / P.O. Box 1000 / Dallas, TX 75313
- [57] Jay Sekulo Live (Radio Ministry) / American Center for Law and Justice
- [58] National Right to Life Committee, Inc. / 419 7th Street N.W., Suite 402 / Washington, DC 20004
- [59] American Family Association Journal (Magazine) / P.O. Drawer 2440 / Tupelo, MS 38803
- [60] UFO's and the Alien Agenda (Book) by Bob Larson / Thomas Nelson Publishers / Nashville, Atlanta, London, Vancouver / Bob Larson (Bob Larson Ministries) / P.O. Box 36A / Denver, CO 80236
- [61] “AIDS Deaths are Expected to Rise 18% per Year” (Newspaper article) / by Michael Waldholz / The Wall Street Journal / November 24, 1999
- [62] “Six Evidences of a Young Earth” / By Answers in Genesis / [www. AIG.org](http://www.AIG.org)

- [63] “Young Age for the Moon and Earth” / By Thomas G. Barnes, D.SC. / August 01, 1982 / [www. ICR.org](http://www.ICR.org)
- [64] “The Age of the Earth's Atmosphere Estimated by its Helium Content / By Larry Vardiman, PH.D. / August 04, 1986 / www. ICR.org
- [65] “Moon Is Unexpectedly Still Cooling and Shrinking” By Jake Herbert, PH.D. / June 06, 2019 / www. ICR.org
- [66] “New Horizons, Pluto, and the Age of the Solar System” / By Jake Herbert, PH.D. / July 14, 2015 / www. ICR.org
- [67] “Four Geological Evidences for a Young Earth” / By Tim Clarey, PH.D. / May 31, 2019 / www. ICR.org
- [68] “Six Biological Evidences for a Young Earth” / By Jeffrey P. Tomkins, PH.D. / April 30, 2019 / www. ICR.org
- [69] Wikipedia / (Article) “Chromosome Numbers”

DETAILED OUTLINE

(In lieu of an index)

PART A -- GOD, LIFE, AND ETERNITY	4
I. A Land of Kings.	5
II. Who is God?	8
III. What is the Meaning of Life?	11
IV. Who and What is Satan?	24
A. Who and What is Satan?	24
B. Satan's Objectives.	25
C. Satan's Tactics.	27
1. Revealed/Physical Attack.	27
2. Hidden/Physical Attack.	28
3. Revealed/Spiritual Attack.	28
4. Hidden/Spiritual Attack.	28
a. Indirect Channel.	29
b. Direct Attack.	31
D. Satan's Targets.	34
1. God's Character.	34
2. The Bible.	35
3. The Church.	35
a. From the inside.	36
b. From the outside.	36
4. Our Families.	38
E. Satan's Overall Strategy.	40
F. God's Alternative Offer.	42

V. Why Does God Allow Evil?	45
A. Why Does God Allow Evil to Exist?	45
B. Why is Satan Allowed to Oppose God?	46
C. Why Did God Create Beings Whom He knew Would Go to Hell?	46
D. Why Does There Have to be a Hell?	47
VI. What is Heaven? (You just died!)	50
VII. How Do We Get to Heaven?	57
Step A. Want God.	57
Step B. Accept God.	57
1. Accept Him (Jesus) as God.	57
2. Accept Him as Your Lord.	58
3. Accept Him as Your Savior.	59
VIII. What About People Who Have Never Had the Bible?	61
IX. What is Hell? (You just died!)	65
X. How Do We Get to Hell?	68
XI. So What Should You Do?	70
A. Accept Jesus as Lord, God, Savior.	70
(Prayer)	70
B. Start Living Your Relationship With God.	70
1. Recognize and Accept Truths.	70
2. Learn to Communicate With God.	76
a. Learn How to Talk to God.	77
b. Learn How to Listen to God.	77
3. Go to God for Comfort and Healing.	81
4. Trust and Obey God in Everything.	82
5. Final Suggestions.	84

a. Remember this Eternal Truth.	85
b. Join a Church.	86
c. Make Some Christian Friends.	86
d. Do Not Be Unequally Yoked.	86
e. Start Each Day Praying and Reading Bible.	87
f. Make Your Media Christian.	87
g. Consider the Source of Every Message.	88
h. Choose Your Heroes Wisely.	89
i. Keep Many Godly Reminders Around You.	89
j. Keep a Journal of God's Loving Intervention.	89
k. Forgive, Forget, and Press On.	90
l. Go For It!	90
m. Destroy Satan's Strongholds in Your Life.	90
(Pickup Truck analogy.)	91
6. Seek God's Blessings for Other People.	94
a. Lead Other People to God.	94
(Family role responsibilities.)	96
b. Vote God's Blessings on this Country.	99
XII. So What Can You Expect?	100
A. Feel Different About Sin and Begin a Process of Change.	100
B. You Can Expect Conflict.	102
1. War with Ourselves.	102
2. War with the World.	102
3. War with Satan.	104
C. You Can Expect Victory, Joy, and a Peaceful Spirit.	105
XIII. What is God?	107
A. God is a Person.	107
B. God is Three Persons.	108
C. God is Masculine.	108
D. God is Spirit.	108
E. God is Infinite and Omnipresent.	109

F. God is Light.	110
G. God is All Seeing.	111
H. God is All Knowing.	111
I. God is All Powerful.	112
1. What God has done with Water.	112
2. What God has done with the Land.	112
3. What God has done with Light and the Earth.	113
4. What God has done with the Elements.	113
5. What God has done with Animals.	113
6. What God has done with People.	114
7. What God does with Satan and all Demons.	115
J. God is Eternal.	115
K. God is Righteous.	116
L. God is Love.	116
M. God is Just. ***	117
N. God is Merciful.***	117
*** (Court case analogy.)	117
O. God Never Changes.	120
XIV. Conclusion.	121

PART B -- THE THEORY OF EVOLUTION VS.

THE AWESOMENESS OF GOD 123

I. What You are About to Experience.	124
II. The Theory of Evolution Explained.	126
A. The Theory of Evolution & Organic Evolution.	126
B. The Big Bang Theory.	126
C. The Theory of Organic Evolution.	127

III. How the Theory of Evolution Disagrees with the Bible.	129
<u>A. How the Universe Came Into Existence.</u>	<u>129</u>
<u>B. How Humans Came Into Existence.</u>	<u>129</u>
<u>C. How Animals Came Into Existence.</u>	<u>130</u>
<u>D. The Age of the Universe.</u>	<u>130</u>
<u>E. The Time of Dinosaurs and the Time of Man.</u>	<u>131</u>
<u>F. Your Value as a Human Being.</u>	<u>131</u>
<u>G. The Origin of Death.</u>	<u>132</u>
<u>H. The Existence of God, Sin, and the Need of Salvation.</u>	<u>132</u>
IV. How the Theory of Evolution is Dangerous and Evil.	133
<u>A. Rejection of God.</u>	<u>133</u>
<u>B. Justification of Evil</u>	<u>134</u>
<u>1. Mass Murder</u>	<u>135</u>
<u>(a. – e.)</u>	
<u>2. Abortion</u>	<u>136</u>
<u>a. God and Abortion.</u>	<u>136</u>
<u>b. Medical Science and Abortion.</u>	<u>137</u>
<u>c. You and Abortion.</u>	<u>138</u>
<u>d. The Theory of Evolution and Abortion.</u>	<u>138</u>
<u>e. Money and Abortion.</u>	<u>139</u>
<u>3. Racism and Slavery.</u>	<u>139</u>
V. How the Theory of Evolution is Disproved by Science & Logic.	141
<u>A. Logical Questions the Theory of Evolution Can't Answer.</u>	<u>141</u>
<u>1. The First Life Form.</u>	<u>142</u>
<u>2. Cell Reproduction.</u>	<u>142</u>
<u>3. Multi-Cellular Organisms.</u>	<u>142</u>
<u>4. Cell Specialization.</u>	<u>143</u>
<u>5. Male and Female Reproduction.</u>	<u>143</u>
<u>6. Mammals.</u>	<u>144</u>
<u>7. Interbreeding of Species.</u>	<u>144</u>
<u>8. Evolutionary Lines of Ascent.</u>	<u>145</u>

9. Livestock.	145
10. Present Day Evolution.	145
11. The Fear of Man.	146
12. Human Dominion.	146
13. Human Biological Complexity.	146
a. Macro Biological Complexity.	147
b. Micro Biological Complexity.	147
14. Requirements for Life on Earth.	148
(a. - m.)	

B. Scientific Facts Which Agree With the Bible and

<u>Disagree With the Theory of Evolution.</u>	150
1. The Age of the Universe.	150
(a. - k.)	
2. The Time Span of Creation.	154
(a. - c.)	
3. The Second Law of Thermodynamics.	156
a. Disproving the Big Bang Theory.	156
b. Disproving the Theory of Organic Evolution	157
4. The Law of Biogenesis (No Life in the Laboratory).	157
5. Mutations and New Species.	158
6. Complexity of Languages.	159

VI. The Fantasy of the Evolution Evidence

and More Proof of the Bible's Truth. **160**

<u>A. Faulty Dating Methods, Ignorance, and Foolish Suggestions.</u>	160
1. Radiometric Dating.	160
a. Organic Substance Dating. (Carbon -14)	160
b. Inorganic Substance Dating.	161
2. Circular Reasoning.	162
3. Light Shifted to the "Red Side."	163
4. Stars Millions of Light-Years Away.	164
5. Stalactites and Stalagmites.	165
6. Moth Population Color Shift.	166

<u>B. Fossils and the Geologic Column.</u>	<u>166</u>
<u>1. What is the Geologic Column?</u>	<u>166</u>
<u>(Evolution's Imaginary Geological Time Chart.)</u>	<u>168</u>
<u>2. How Did Rock Layers Form and What is a Fossil?</u>	<u>168</u>
<u>3. What Does the Geological Evidence Show?</u>	<u>169</u>
<u>a. Bible is True & Evolution is False.</u>	<u>169</u>
<u>(1) Age of the Layers.</u>	<u>169</u>
<u>(2) Time of Dinosaurs, Mammals & Man.</u>	<u>170</u>
<u>(3) Evolution of Species & Time.</u>	<u>172</u>
<u>b. The World-Wide Flood Was a Reality.</u>	<u>173</u>
<u>(1) The Ark was Big Enough.</u>	<u>173</u>
<u>(2) Earth Before the Flood.</u>	<u>174</u>
<u>(3) Evidence of the Flood.</u>	<u>177</u>
<u>(4) Arrangement of Fossils.</u>	<u>178</u>
<u>C. "Missing Links" - A Chain of Lies.</u>	<u>179</u>
<u>1. The Problems with Paleontology.</u>	<u>179</u>
<u>2. Supposed Links Between Apes and Man.</u>	<u>181</u>
<u>(a. - k. & Scopes Monkey Trial.)</u>	
<u>3. Supposed Links Between Other Species.</u>	<u>184</u>
<u>(a. - e.)</u>	
<u>D. Desperate Maneuvers on the Part of the Evolutionists.</u>	<u>186</u>
<u>1. Molecular Taxonomy / Chromosome Banding.</u>	<u>186</u>
<u>2. Punctuated Equilibrium / Hopeful Monsters.</u>	<u>187</u>
<u>3. Punctuated Equilibrium & Molecular Taxonomy.</u>	<u>187</u>

VII. If the Theory of Evolution is so Obviously False, then

<u>Why Does the World Believe It, and Why is this Battle Raging?</u>	<u>188</u>
--	------------

VIII. What Are the Goals of this Information?

<u>1. To Show that the Bible and Evolution are Mutually Exclusive.</u>	<u>191</u>
<u>2. Call Attention to the Vast Evidence of God.</u>	<u>191</u>
<u>3. To Show that the Facts Agree with the Bible.</u>	<u>192</u>
<u>4. To Show that Everything that Disagrees with the Bible is</u>	

<u>Wrong, Potentially Dangerous, and Possibly Evil.</u>	192
5. <u>To Expose the Serious War Going On All Around Us.</u>	192
6. <u>Show How Awesome God is, Inspiring Humility.</u>	193
7. <u>To Show How God can Justly Send People to Hell</u>	
<u>Who Never Heard that He Died for their Sins.</u>	194
8. <u>To Show the Utter Foolishness Which Results from</u>	
<u>Rejecting God.</u>	195
9. <u>Make You Part of Solution Instead of Part of the Problem.</u>	195
a. <u>The Theory of Evolution is a Religion.</u>	196
b. <u>Life in the Beginning (Reprogramming).</u>	197
<u>(Ancient Technology & Decadence.)</u>	
c. <u>Evolutionary Concepts (Deprogramming).</u>	199
d. <u>Where Did Cain Get His Wife?</u>	200
e. <u>Continents, Animals, and the Ice Age.</u>	201
f. <u>A Creation Scientist is Not an Oddity.</u>	202
<u>IX. Conclusion and a Warning.</u>	203
<u>(Prophetic Signs of Judgment and of the Return of Jesus.</u>	205
<u>X. SETI and Evolution -- Is There Intelligent Life on Other Planets?</u>	209